

NOLITHA  
THE SUCCUBUS

DWAA NATION®  
PRECIOUS MOLOI

## PROLOGUE

### A FEW YEARS EARLIER

People often talk about the ill treatment of Step Parents, I'm glad I was not at the receiving end of that. I was only 6 years old when my Mother got married again, after her failed union with my abusive alcoholic Father, who got arrested for GBV. He committed suicide after a year of his imprisonment, no one knows why. He never wrote a note nor said anything to anyone, they just found him in the showers with his throat slashed and the blade in his hand.

My Step Father is a well known Pastor, with a large church following. His church was able to give us at least 30-40k a month, since his devotion was fully at the church. He was a loving man, well respected and loved me as his own..

I went to a good school, had a good upbringing in a home filled with warmth and love. He was never married, nor had kids of his own before my Mother because the church was the center of his life. Took almost all his time, so when my Mother crossed paths with his. They instantly clicked and got married, the church loved her. She was a wonderful Pastor's wife..

Our perfect family was torn apart on one fateful night, when my Father had traveled overseas for a sermon and a promotion of his daily devotion book. 3 thugs broke into our home, raped and killed my Mother in the most brutal manner. They cut off parts of her body such as her breasts, fingers, toes, eyes pulled out and her throat slashed deeply.

I was made to watch that horrifying scene and shockingly enough they did not do anything to me.

After that ordeal, after the Funeral. Dad and I relocated to another province, so we can forget about the trauma. I had to undergo a lot of psych evaluations and meds just so my sanity can be brought back to me. My Father gave up his church, we started afresh in another province, he started a new church that was twice as big as his original church.

He was appointed a Bishop after that, he even wrote a book about my Mother's tragic passing and it was the best seller both in Africa and overseas. His earnings moved from 30k to 350k a month. What has changed? He made me his wife. When I turned 19 after matric, we got married. From his step daughter to being his wife.

.

01

A FEW YEARS LATER

Nesta: Madam

I turned my head to my shoulder and looked at her..

Nesta: Your bath water is ready

Me: Thank you Nesta

My name is Nolitha Gumede- Mwangi, am 27 years old now. My Husband who happens to be my Step Father, Mike is 50 years old on the dot. We have been doing this ever since I matured and turned 16, then at 19 we legally got married. Beautiful wedding I must say, it was private and amounted to 1.5million. We had 50 guests in total, 90% were church members, his close friends and other Pastors. No one noticed that something was off because no one knows that I am his Step Daughter, only the close clique knows.. It's so funny because I get everything

from him, I am well taken care of but deep down I'm not happy. He can be loving when he wants too, and he can also be brutal when he wants too. His aura is unsettling, scary and not a man you can just come up and disrespect. Even at church, he's very respected and all over. Church members usually say he's very anointed, unogcobo.

When he prays people fall, when he lays his hand on you. You fall and roll multiple times on the ground. He can heal with touch, prayer and words. He is a powerful Bishop, originally born and bred in Kenya. Bishop Mike Alhaadi Mwangi..

Nesta is my personal maiden servant, an assistant. Whatever you wanna call her. She's always by my side, apparently as uMam'Bishop. I need a slave girl with me all the time. She's older, she's 30 years old. Very polite and nice..

We stay in four ways, a beautiful big house..

My schedule is planned everyday, I don't do nor am I allowed to manipulate it and do anything out of routine without having to ask for permission first. If I don't, there's always terrible consequences. Most women envy me, most women want my life. They want to be like me, but behind these closed doors. It gets cold sometimes, a big house filled with a lot to tell. A lot that I can't come out and tell.. I've seen Mike at his worst, and he's not someone you wanna mess with. Our perfect picture life is only missing one thing, Kids. On my side, I'm okay. On his side he's not.

He is infertile for some reason, but it seems to not bother him. It bothers me not too..

After bathing, my outfit was already laid on the bed. This morning, I have an interview to do then later on tea party with other Pastors wives. I don't have a friend that is not married to a Pastor, Mike greatly disapproves of that. Says I need to be friends with

women who know this life, our life as they will encourage me well. Some of them are way older, and I had to be old. Act mature young as I am.. I am uMam'Bishop after all..

Nesta helped me to dress up..

Nesta: Are you ready for the interview?

I looked at myself in the mirror and took a deep breath..

Me: I think so

Nesta: I know you will do great

Me: I hope so

We heard the door bell ringing..

Nesta: Must be your flowers



Mike sends me flowers every week..

Nesta: Okay we done, we should go down and have breakfast

Me: Thank you Nesta

BISHOP MIKE

I was in my office watching our last Sunday church service. The church is always full, our building Harbours 150 000 church members, that's how big the Angel Wings Congregation is..

Paul is my right hand man, he is my slave boy or at least one of them..

Paul: Bishop

Me: Yes

Paul: Papa apologies for disturbing you

I paused the tape..

Paul: The annoiting oil has arrived

Me: It has?

Paul: Yes

Me: Blessed?

Paul: Yes

Me: Bring me one bottle

He brought me one bottle, I looked at it..

Paul: Brought forth straight from Lord Khalifa's place

Me: Blessed, how many bottles?

Paul: 35k so far

We sell the oil every month for R40. The bottle last them for a month..

We buy olive oil, then filter it. Take it to the man who made me what I am today to bless it. When my congregation uses it, they will feel devine powers but definitely not from heaven. Dark powers. The congregation thinks that everything happening in my church is heavenly but the buried goat heads help draw people closer to my church, when they start to rot underneath and maggots start to come out. Those maggots represent my church members. Every month a goat is killed and the head is buried to attract more members. They under a spell one that they won't be able to get out of.. To be where I am today, great sacrifices had to be made.. Sacrifes that go beyond my human conscience.

Me: Check the time and see how many minutes left for my breakfast with Pastor Evans

Pastor Evans owns a big church back in America, a very close friend and one that I have a spiritual brother relationship with. He also helped groom me

to be this powerful, blessed to have met him. We all wear distinctive rings on our middle wedding fingers, you would it take it as a normal wedding ring but it's not. It has been blessed.

NOLITHA MWANGI

On our way downstairs to eat breakfast, I remembered that the pet hasn't been fed.

Me: Nesta I need to go pray

Nesta: Yes Mam

Down in the basement that's where we keep the python, no one is allowed to go down there. Other than me, and my Husband..

I walked down to it, it's locked up in a cage. A big glass cage because it's big..

I unlocked with the code, fingerprint, and facial recognition. The door opened, I switched on the light and went down..

It has to be fed at 3 times a day, with rats..

I took two big rats and opened the slot, I put them in and closed. They slid in, and fell inside the cave for the python to eat..

This is my life, one that I had to get used too without being given a choice..

BISHOP MIKE

Paul: Papa the car is ready

Me: Thank you Paul

I got up from the chair, he got me my hat and glasses..

I took my phone and walked out..

Me: Noli's interview is starting at what time?

Paul: In an hour Papa

Me: Then I have to call her in the car

Paul: Yes Bishop

**NOLITHA MWANGI**

I washed my hands and then went to the dining area to eat breakfast. Eating breakfast alone, it's not a problem anymore. My husband is always busy so he's hardly home for such minor occasions..

My phone rang, It was him..

Me: Papa

Mike: Mi Amor (My love)

I blushed, it never gets old..

Mike: How are you feeling about the interview?

Me: A little nervous, I don't wanna be asked questions that I cannot answer

Mike: They have Emailed me the questions last night, it's normal questions

Me: Then I'm glad, I can do the interview

Despite it all, I do love him..

Mike: I'm having breakfast with Pastor Evans, he flew in last night

Me: I thought he would be staying with us

Mike: He booked himself a hotel

Me: That's unusual, are you guys okay?

Mike: We are okay Amor

Me: I will talk to you later

Mike: I love you Amor

Me: I love you too

.

To be continued



02

NOLITHA

Now that I was in the studio, it felt real. This is my very first one on one interview with Jollie from the Johannesburg breakfast show. The show runs from 7am-8am. Jollie is brutally nice if I can put it that way, she snatches the truth out of you with a smile.

Jollie: This Morning we are joined by a beautiful lady, Mrs Nolitha Mwangi. The wife of the most popular Bishop Mike Mwangi.

She turned to me..

Jollie: How are you Ms Noli, may I say. You look beautiful

Me: Thank you, thank you very much

Nesta was around, I was happy with her being here..

Me: Thank you for having me, You beautiful too

Jollie: Thank you.. Wow we've been trying to get you here

Me: I'm finally here

Jollie: And you finally here

The constant smiling was even hurting my cheeks..

Jollie: So tell us about yourself, who is Nolitha?

Me: Well I'm just a simple woman

Jollie: I wouldn't say, you far from being simple

We both laughed..

Me: It has it's ups and downs

Jollie: Your marriage you mean?

Me: My marriage is no different from any other normal marriage

Jollie: The age gap, now most people have accused you of being a gold digger. Most people have frowned upon you being a Young Bishop's wife. They call you a trophy wife more than a spiritual woman and have said there's no way such a bling like you can help lead the flock

Me: Most people have said that but I love my husband, he loves me. I am a true woman of God despite my age, despite how I present myself I don't wanna be an ancient Mam'fundisi. There's no formula to how one should serve God, it's not about how I dress but very much about what's inside of me

Jollie: I understand.. Now there's been a lot of scandals, assumptions and accusations with regards to how the church is led. The oil of wonders?

Me: Anointing oil has been used before, it's even biblical

Jollie: I understand.. But hear me out, why not call it "Anointing oil", why oil of wonders?

Me: It has healed a lot of our church members, it has healing effects that's why we called it the oil of wonders

Jollie: Now your Husband has been said to be working with dark forces other than God. The church is said to be not Godly

Me: Not everyone will love you, with the world having so much false Pastors, Prophets and Bishops. When one that is genuine comes, it's difficult to accept him and see him as genuine

Jollie: That is true

Me: I mean how many sex scandals has my husband had? Zero! We see Pastors doing ungodly acts. Congregations are eating snakes, drinking detergents that's a health hazard. That is not how a church of God should be ran

Jollie: So you are vouching that your Husband is a Genuine Bishop?

Me: Yes.. He is a Man of God, and that is that

Jollie: I bought his book and read it

She picked up the book..

Jollie: Best seller, it has sold close to 400 000 almost worldwide since it's release a few years ago. "My Redeemer Lives". He detailed the death of his ex wife and how that almost broke him, But God saved

him from that pain

My chest started feeling hot, stomach tied in knots.  
Throat dry and hot flushes..

Me: It was a gruesome chapter to read, it tore deep  
inside too

Jollie: He said after losing his wife, that's when he  
met the love of his life. Did your relationship with  
him start when you were a minor?

Me: No Mam', we met when I was 19. Got married a  
few months later, it was a destined union.

Soulmates

Jollie: That's deep wow.. I think we should take a  
break

BISHOP MIKE

Me: Pastor Ephraim Evans-Solinsky

Evans: Bishop M

We shared a hug..

Me: Good to see you as always, my greatest apologies for being late. Traffic

Evans: With people going to work, I'm not surprised

Me: Blessed my spiritual Father

Evans: I was actually streaming your wife's interview on my iPad, she's very well spoken

Me: I was scared to view it

Evans: I understand

The waitress came and handed us the Menus..

Me: Thank you

We waited for her to walk away..

Evans: She's doing very well, I was scared. Especially since you took her at a young age

Me: She was easy to manipulate at that age

Evans: Blessed my Son

Me: Though we worried why you not our guest

Evans: I wanted to stay at the Hotel, never stayed in one here. I'm always at your house

Me: I understand

Evans: How is it going?

Me: It's going good, life is beautiful

Evans: I did say this was the most beneficial business. You never go wrong with a church

Me: That's true



Evans: I think we should order

Me: Yes please

NOLITHA

After our interview, I checked online. It was trending number 3. I was scared to check, they have said some brutal things about me and my husband but our members have always defended us with their lives..

The comments weren't as brutal, except for a few:

"That oil they use is suspicious

- @Kiddo"

.

"Nolitha should not fool us! Girl blink twice when you doing an interview again and we'll come and

rescue you

- @Nomtha"

.

"Proud child of AWC, my church! Mama was very well spoken. A true woman of God

-@Pjj"

Nesta brought my bag..

Nesta: Are you ready to go Madam? The car has come

Me: Yes.. I'm ready to go

Nesta: Let's go

Me: Let's go bid the staff our goodbyes

Nesta: I must say, the interview went well

Me: You think?

Nesta: Yes

BISHOP MIKE

Me: I'm glad to hear that

Evans: They were going to extort you for more money

Me: I can't believe they were resorting to that

Evans: They were witnessing your riches from afar, they had to find out about

Evans: Don't worry.. You are well protected that's why we took care of them, all of them

Me: Noli should never find out about the true nature of her Mother's death

Evans: I know and that is one secret we will take to the grave since the people who were hired are all taken care of

Me: That's all I wanted to know

NOLITHA

As we were walking to the car, we bumped into this other old woman. She looked at me.

Woman: You are going to burn in hell

Me: Excuse Me?

Woman: That is not the church of God, that is a church of shame. Misleading God's children like that? I pity you! You will feel God's wrath!

Nesta: Mama please, you can't say such things

Woman: The truth shall set her free

Nesta: What truth? You standing there judging! You are the one who will burn in hell!!!

Nesta pulled me away..

Nesta: She should be ashamed of herself!

.

To be continued

## NOLITHA

What that woman said to me affected me a lot. I know the truth, I know what's happening and I know my Husband is not sincere. I know he's working with other forces to make him what he is today, or what we are. This life is so comfortable, some things are bigger than the truth. The truth comes out, we lose what we have. We back to square one. A comfortable life is all I've known, ever since my Mother got married to him, thus far.

I don't know any other life, other than this one..

Although we have help around the house, but I prefer preparing my husband's meals, do his laundry and clean our bedroom. I don't want another woman doing that for my husband..

I was wearing all pink, pink formal pants, a white shirt, pink jacket and pink heels. A white hat and a small pink bag..

We do the tea party with the ladies at least twice a month, just advise each other on things and talk about the challenges we face as Pastor Wives..

Nesta won't be attending with me, it's strictly Pastor Wives only..

She walked me out to the car outside..

**BISHOP MIKE**

I was doing a house call, one of my members was suffering from swollen legs. Her legs get swollen and hard, she hasn't walked in 3 months. She once

came to my church, gave her the oil and she's making good progress now..

I don't fake miracles, the oil itself does wonders because it's blessed by Lord Khalifa. Mixed with other things that attract dark forces, and some fragrance to make it smell nice..

I was with Sello, Sello is our tech guy. He had his camera with him to video tape the testimony..

We have our own channel where we play the testimonies, where I cast out demons. All those things that attract and keep viewers entertained..

When we got to her house, she was walking with a crutch. It was great to witness the moment..

She threw herself at my feet and sobbed, showing



tremendous gratitude..

Me: Rise up my child

Her: Papa you don't know how grateful I am, you gave me another chance to live. I never thought I was going to walk again

I helped her up..

Me: Rise up, You should only show your gratitude to God. He deserves the glory, I'm just his servant..  
Come on, rise up

I helped her up..

NOLITHA

We are a clique of 5 Women. We don't just recruit,

your Husband has to be powerful, well known and very financial stable..

I am the youngest, and my Husband is the most powerful compared to their Husbands. Followed by Prophet Ngobeni, who is the second powerful. Today we were having the tea party at Mrs Ngobeni's House, in their Garden. We meet at least twice a week..

Mrs N: Thank you for coming ladies

We sat down.. There's sandwiches, meat platter of chicken drumsticks, wings, meatballs, and Ribs. Ice tea, Juice, and a cake..

MaNdlovu: Noli I watched your Interview

This morning, it was beautiful

Mrs N: It was worth watching

Me: Thank you.. Thank you Ladies

Mrs N: Ladies thank you for being my guests at my house, Thank you for trusting me to carry the meeting out today

Me: Thank you for hosting us

Mrs N: Usually our meetings are about just chit chatting and nothing serious, but unfortunately one of our own Pastor Sandra is faced with a scandal

She looked at Sandra..

Mrs N: Pastor Sandla

P Sandra: Thank you.. Ladies I don't even know what to say. The woman who has been cleaning my Husband's office or hired too, started trying to seduce my Husband. When I found out, we had her dismissed from church and now she's crying rape. Saying my husband has been sexually violating her in the office

MaNdlovu: That's deep

P Sandra: She's threatening to go out in public with this, tarnish our reputation and destroy my husband

Mrs N: This is deep, the devil has entered your premises

MaNdlovu: Indeed

Me: Are we sure he didn't do it?

They all looked at me...

Me: I am sorry but, with such allegations she must have proof. If we go out full force and defend then proof comes out, we going to look stupid. I don't want any bad publicity for me and my husband

P Sandra: Wow Noli. When your Husband was going through it, when all the allegations about the oil, about him being fake, about the church serving dark powers we defended you. No questions asked, but you turn and do this? When I need you ladies the most?

Me: This is different, these are rape allegations one mistake it's over for all of us. We will be labeled as women of God who support rape and a rapist

P Sandra: Excuse me? What gives you the right to

paint and call my Husband a rapist?

Me: What is he then?

MaNdlovu: Ladies this is not how we behave

P Sandra: I'm done here

Mrs N: Pastor Sandra wait

P Sandra: I'm not going to sit here and hear this, with Noli acting like her husband is a Saint!

Me: I'm just being honest!

P Sandra: At least we didn't marry old Men for their money!

I got up and took my glass and poured the juice on her..

MaNdlovu: Ohhhhhh No!!

Me: At least my Husband is not a rapist!

She took the napkin then wiped her face, took her bag and walked away..

MaNdlovu: That was uncalled for

Me: It was very called for Nxa!!

BISHOP MIKE

We had a great clip of the woman saying her testimony. We added the clips from when she first visited the church in a wheelchair, to her current situation..

Sello: I'll edit everything and upload

Me: Thank you

We got into the car..

Me: Uhm driver

Driver: Yes Sir?

Me: Please drive me to the girls house

Driver: Yes Sir

We have a girls house, girls who have devoted themselves to serving Christ. Stay pure, abstain from sex and be pure. We currently have 20 girls, have 2 Sisters who look after them. The girls visit home every weekend and most for school holidays. Pure



virgins, never been touched. Ages 13-20..

We only take in Virgins..

NOLITHA

Me: If she comes back for our next meeting, I'm not coming! You women will choose between Me and her

Mrs N: I just think that we should have supported her she's our friend

Me: And be hypocrites? What if her husband is indeed a rapist? Shame the victim and support a rapist?

MaNdlovu: I understand where you coming from but what if and I mean what if the woman is indeed lying?

Me: I don't care! For now I support this woman, I'm supporting the victim. It'll be hypocritical of me as a

woman to not believe another woman

Mrs N: Eish

Me: I'm leaving, I'll see you Ladies on our next meeting

.

To be continued

[04

NOLITHA

later on I prepared dinner for Me and my Husband. Having such a Powerful admired Man, I need to keep the spark be on my A game at all times so he doesn't go looking somewhere else. So far, I can confidently say he hasn't had any affair with anyone. We have been on this journey since I was 16, I'm 27 now and I don't think he would go and dip his dick somewhere else. He has all that he needs at home..

I was preparing him his favorite meal, with the help of Nesta. We also get to gossip..

Nesta: Seems like a lot happened

Me: Very true

Nesta: I'm glad you stood your ground Madam, Pastor Sandra needs to understand that her husband is a rapist

Me: I don't know what these Pastors think, go and do such things? Did they think it was going to end well?

Nesta: I'm telling you!

Me: Here.. Put that there

She took the casserole dish...

**BISHOP MIKE**

Sister Theresa walked in..

Sister: Bishop

Me: Sister

Sister: How are you Sir?

Me: I'm well and you?

Sister: I'm well too

Me: Blessed

Sister: Zethu and Melissa will see you now

Me: Thank you

She walked out..

The girls have been brainwashed, Controlled, blackmailed with the Bible and religion so that they can give themselves to me sexually.

This has been an ongoing on thing for me that I do on the side. In exchange, their families are well taken care of, they also are well taken care of. I made sure I get girls with struggling backgrounds, broken

families and homes. Poverty stricken, that's how I romance my way to their Parents too so that they can trust me. I am a "Man of God" after all, and the Parents are already being controlled too. The Goat heads, the oil, the prayers. They are tamed and dare not to question me, they would actually defend me with their lives..

The girls walked in..

Me: Girls

Zethu lives with her elderly Grandmother, both girls deceased. Melissa lives with her Mother and siblings, in a shack. The Mother barely make ends meet with such a squad of kids..

They both sat down opposite me, in their pure white dresses and doeks..

Me: Zethu how is Grandma holding up?

Zethu: She's doing better, her medication is helping..  
All thanks to you Papa my little Sister doesn't have to go and stand in the queue at the clinic for hours, starting from 4am

Me: Blessed, yesterday we sent out groceries to them and a new school uniform for your Sister

Zethu: Thank you Papa, God bless you

Me: Melissa.. You should know the house is coming along well, by next week it will be finished

Melissa: Mom did tell me yesterday on the phone

Me: Are they Happy?

Melissa: Very happy.. No more sharing one mattress

Me: You see girls I care a lot about you

They nodded..

Me: Melissa lock the door

Melissa: Yes Papa

NOLITHA

I wiped my hands with the dish swab..

Me: Nesta I'm coming, I'm going to the bathroom

Nesta: Okay Madam

I walked away and made my way to the basement..

I unlocked and walked in, turned on the light. It's not too bright as to brighten the whole room..

I went to get 2 rats, then went to feed the Python. I looked at it, it's getting bigger we might need another cage. A big one that will accommodate it. I looked at it, the eyes turned red a bit and then went back to normal. I turned back as I felt a cold shiver

running down my spine, I switched off the light and walked out..

BISHOP MIKE

I have a couch in my office that's where all the sexual fun takes place..

Very first time I'm having two girls..

Melissa is 18, Zethu is 16. Zethu still a virgin, Melissa I've slept with her twice already.

It's 20 girls in total so there's plenty of indulgence for me..

I take some pills that help with a much stronger erection and for me to give it good..



I was sitting on the couch, my back leaning against it. Melissa was kneeling in between my legs and giving me a BJ. She's a bit experienced, and it's better having an experienced girl with a non-experienced one to make her feel comfortable..

Zethu was kneeling by my side, naked too. I was fondling with her breasts as we were kissing. Firm small breasts with pointy nipples..

Zethu nodded..

Melissa leaned over her and started sucking on her left breast, as she massaged the other breast with her other hand. That's when I went down on her too...

A few minutes to it, she started moaning. She was feeling the pleasure and couldn't stop moving..

[REMOVED]

## NOLITHA

Nesta was setting the table for me, as I took a long bubble bath. I used my foam bath and essential oils that smell good..

When I was done bathing, I went to wear a lingirie. All red lingirie. Lace bra and an underwear, the underwear at the back was open. You can visibly see my ass popping out..

I put on a black eyeliner, mascara and eyeshadow then a red lipstick. I nicely tied my wig, and cipped it on tight so it doesn't come out. I took my red silk gown and put it over, then put on my red heels..

## BISHOP MIKE

I started with Melissa so that Zethu can be twice comfortable, if I started with her she would be traumatized. I let Zethu sit next to her.. Melissa sat back on the couch, legs wide open. She was squeezing her breasts and lowering her other hand down to play with her clit. I inserted my index finger inside of her, while the thumb of the same hand rubbed her clit..

Melissa moved her hand and placed it at the back of Zethu's neck and pulled her over to suck on her tit..

That went on until Melissa got really wet, she was moaning a bit loud but no one will hear her. The office is sound proof and Sister Theresa is occupying the other girls, keeping them busy from coming here.. [REMOVED]

NOLITHA

Nesta: I'm retiring to bed

Me: Thank you Nesta

Nesta: You look beautiful

I laughed..

Me: Get out of here

She laughed too..

Nesta: Good night Madam

Me: Goodnight

She left..

The table was set beautifully. Red & White candles. A well prepared dinner and a bottle of dry red wine, I looked at the time. He will be home soon. I took the wine and opened it then poured myself a glass..

**BISHOP MIKE**

I am infertile so I don't necessarily have to use a

condom. One of the consequences of wanting riches, that part of my life doesn't exist.. I don't know how they did it, but I am infertile..

I slowly pressed in, she was still tight. Well, I'm the only Man she has sex with and not everyday too..

I pressed in again and she held my arm tight, I looked at her she took off her hand. She lowered her hand down on her clit to rub it, with Zethu still sucking on her breasts..

I pressed in deeper and deeper until I had fully stretched her, it was a good feeling. Having her vaginal walls tightnening against my dick, massaging me as I went in and out.

I put my hand on her neck and slightly choked her..  
[REMOVED]

.

To be continued

No edits

PLEASE READ THE FULL REMOVED PARTS ON OUR  
CLOSED GROUP "DWAA NATION ORIGINAL" under  
"Announcements"

[https://m.facebook.com/groups/792982564625505?  
group\\_view\\_referrer=search](https://m.facebook.com/groups/792982564625505?group_view_referrer=search)

...

Alternatively read the full insert on Visionarywritings

<https://visionarywritings.com/author/9>

05

NOLITHA

I looked at the time, it was now 22:00. I put on my PJs and went straight to bed. No matter how busy he is at church, he always finds a way to call me. Let me know he will be late, this silence is new, uncalled for and alarming. I had mixed emotions. I could be angry only to find something is seriously wrong, I could be worried only to find he's fine. I didn't know what to think and what to feel..

BISHOP MIKE

Me: Is she going to be okay?

Sister T: I've given her some pills to help her sleep

Me: I know most girls get traumatized but she was in shock, she was.. She was trembling afterwards and

absent minded

Sister T: She didn't expect that, it'll take time but she will get used to it. Most girls have, plus she has Melissa

I put my hand on her shoulder..

Me: I trust you

Sister T: Thank you Father

Me: I will come through tomorrow, now I have to get home. It was good seeing the girls

Sister T: Thank you for stopping By

I took my hat and made my way out..

NOLITHA

I tried to sleep, and halfway through my sleep I had a nightmare. I saw Python, when it's eyes changed and became red. I woke up screaming and panting, my



heart was beating heavy. The room was not entirely dark, my side lamp provided partial light.

I pulled down the covers and got out of bed, I went to the small table and poured myself a glass of water. I gulped it down. The nightmare really freaked me out..

It was hard going back to bed, the nightmare really shook me. So I sat on the bed looked at the time. 23:30 now, on the dot..

I sighed and put the glass away, that's when the door opened. I stood up to my feet..

He took off his hat and looked at it, I folded my arms..

Mike: Mi Amor (My love)

Me: I was worried

Mike: I'm sorry.. I had an exorcism, it took longer than I expected

Me: You could've called

Mike: You know how it is, can't call right in the middle of deliverance

I exhaled..

Me: At least you are okay

He smiled..

Mike: I see you prepared dinner for us downstairs

Me: Wanted to do something special for you

Mike: I understand.. How about we go out for breakfast tomorrow?

Me: I'd like that

I walked to him, and took off his jacket. I kissed him on his neck..

Me: Well.. I think.. We can.. Skip.. Right.. To.. Dessert

I ran my hand down to his crotch and gently squeezed it. He kissed me on my neck leaving the feel of his breath hitting against the side of my neck..

I unbuckled his belt as he left wet kisses on my neck, his dick started to slowly harden.

Mike: You smell good

Me: And someone down there wants to come out and play

I crouched down, preparing to give him a BJ. I unbuttoned him, and unzipped his pants. I pulled them down, that's when he stopped me. I came back up..

Me: What's wrong?

He held both my hands and kissed them..

Mike: Not tonight, I had a tiring day

Me: Of course.. I'm sorry

He kissed me on my cheek and walked to the bathroom..

MELISSA

Zethu couldn't sleep, she kept on waking up because of the nightmare of what happened earlier on. She was scared, trembling and her heart was beating fast.. We share the same room..

Me: It's okay

I hugged her..

Me: It's okay

We broke the hug, I fixed her hair..

Zethu: It doesn't wanna go away

Me: I know.. The first time is the hardest but along the way, you get used to it

Zethu: This is not right Mel

I cupped her cheeks with my hands..

Me: Those are not words that we say, Papa has been good to us. He loves us and takes good care of us, we are doing the Lord's work. He is a man of God and had a vision that he should engage in sexual intercourse with us. Giving ourselves to him, is a blessing. He is the chosen one, and works by God's command. Better your Virginity taken by an

annointed Men than just someone else, in that you  
blessed

She nodded..

Me: Come on, get up let's pray again

Zethu: Okay

I went to take out the two sacred necklaces, with the  
Pedants of Virgin Mary..

I gave her hers.. She went and lit the white candles,  
we knelt down before the big portrait of Virgin Mary..

I took our white cloths and we covered our heads  
with it all down to our shoulders..

We bowed our heads and prayed:

"O Mary, I wonder at that profound humility, which troubled thy blessed heart at the message of the Angel Gabriel, that thou hadst been chosen to be the Mother of the Son of the most high God, the while thou didst profess thyself His lowly handmaiden; ashamed at the sight of my own pride, I beg of thee the grace of a contrite and humble heart, so that, acknowledging my misery, I may come to attain the glory promised to those who are truly humble of heart.

Our Father once and Hail Mary seven times"

Me: Hail Mary Amen

Zethu: Hail Mary Amen

NOLITHA

I felt someone shaking me.. I slowly opened my eyes..

Nesta: Madam wake up

Me: What time is it?

Nesta: 7am.. Papa asked me to wake you up, you two have a breakfast appointment?

Me: Ohw yes.. Can't believe I overslept

Nesta: Which is unlike you

Me: been having this nightmare

Nesta: It's about?

Me: Probably nothing, just a nightmare

Nesta: I'll prepare your bath

Me: Thank you

MELISSA

Our day starts early, very early. By 5am we are saying our prayers and preparing for school. The girl's compound is big, we are actually home schooled.



Teachers come here, but only for the ones still in high school. I completed my matric last year and I'm doing my first year at the university of witwatersrand. I am academically gifted, never had problems at school..I want to be a surgeon, and I'm working towards that goal.

I don't wear Pants, we not allowed to wear pants. You can wear leggings but with a dress or a skirt and our hair always has to be covered. Since we took the oath of purity, we wear rings on my middle fingers. Gold wedding bands. We mostly wear white..

I was wearing my white dress and sneakers, I covered my hair. No makeup, no long nails no nothing but we are allowed to have phones. My whatsapp beeped, my younger Brother had sent me pictures of the house. 6 roomed house, I've never seen my family so happy. There's also gonna be outside rooms so everyone can have a bedroom..

My Mother is beyond the word Happy, Bishop Mike is a very generous Man. I took his book and put it in my bag, I read it all the time. Actually I know it by heart now, very much fascinated by his religion with Noli. They got married when she was 19, a year younger than me. I follow her on social media, she's living it up. Living the life.. Papa seems like a good husband to her, he loves her, treats her like a Queen and gives her everything that she needs..

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

Sister Williams walked..

Sister W: Are you ready?

Me: Yes Mam

Sister W: Let's go, the car is waiting

I took my bag and walked out...

BISHOP MIKE

Melissa is a good girl, committed and I loved how she was of help yesterday with Zethu.

I am thinking of buying her a car, nothing major just a mini Cooper. I'm sure she will love that..

.

To be continued

06

NOLITHA

I tried to enjoy dinner with my Husband, as a busy Man. I know he took his time out to do something nice, make up for last night. If it wasn't for my

tiredness, It would be the best makeup apology but unfortunately I couldn't bring myself to enjoy. I was busy yawning and dozing..

Mike: What's wrong?

Me: Hardly got any sleep last night

Mike: I'm sorry that I kept you up with my being absent

Me: No it's not that

He looked at me..

Me: I have been dreaming about Python

Mike: In what way?

Me: Her eyes would turn red

Mike: That's unusual

Me: Yes.. It recently started

Mike: Maybe you should take some time out from feeding her, maybe Nesta can relieve you

Me: No.. I thought we agreed to not bring anyone to

this

Mike: Nesta is almost like family to us, she has vouched to be silent, taken the vow of silence. She would never

Me: I guess so

Mike: I'll talk to her

Me: Okay

MELISSA

School is okay but I heard on my 3rd year, that's when the real work starts. I hope I'll survive under pressure, this is a big blessing to me. My math was not so impressive but they took me anyway, so I only have one shot at this. I flunk, he's going to stop paying for my fees..

After my first class, I checked my phone as my best friend and I, Phelo. Made our way to our second

class..

Papa has sent me 5 pictures of Mini coopers, to choose one.. I stopped with my mouth wide open..

Phelo: Are you okay Mel?

Me: Yes just good news that's all

Phelo: Wanna share?

Me: Not yet, I don't wanna jinx it

I texted him back replying to the car that took me. It was white with a black strap at the bottom..

We continued walking to class..

NOLITHA

He opened the door for me..

Me: I'm sorry that I couldn't be a better company

He rubbed my arm with his hand..

Mike: You have nothing to apologize for

Me: How is your afternoon looking? Maybe we can do Lunch

Mike: Go home and relax Amor, We will do dinner

Me: I'll see you then

Mike: Yes

He kissed me on my forehead..

Mike: I love you

Me: I love you too

I got into the car, and he closed the door..

I put on my shades..

MELISSA

I was too excited to even concentrate in class. My phone vibrated, it was a call from Papa..

I excused myself from the room and went out to answer..

Me: Papa

Mike: My flower

Me: How are you?

Mike: Now that I'm hearing your voice, I'm good

I blushed.. He doesn't just call, he's very busy. For me to get the call, It was fullfiling..



Mike: Is that your final decision?

Me: Yes

Mike: Blessed.. I'll go to the car dealership and buy it

Me: Today?

Mike: Yes.. It will make it easy to travel to school every day

Me: Thank you so much Papa

Mike: You are an amazing girl, you deserve beautiful things

Me: Thank you

NOLITHA

I arrived at home..

Nesta: Madam

Me: Nesta

Nesta: How was your breakfast?

Me: Lovely

Nesta: That's good to hear

Me: I wanna rest a little, please wake me up at noon

Nesta: Yes Madam

BISHOP MIKE

Pastor Evans walked into the restaurant.

Evans: I thought you were having breakfast with the wife

Me: She just left

Evans: Everything okay?

Me: Unfortunately no

Evans: I'm all ears

Me: She's dreaming about python

He looked at me..

Evans: That's impossible

Me: Apparently not

Evans: Did she say anything? Anything out of the ordinary with regards to the dreams?

Me: No.. Other than it's eyes turned red

Evans: This doesn't sound good

Me: Nolitha cannot know that her Mother's spirit was trapped inside python and she's the one making us rich

Evans: We will fix it, don't worry too much. We will fix it.. Nolitha can never leave you, she's the only woman who understands what we are and what we do. If she dares to leave, we will make her life difficult!

NOLITHA

I was wokep up by a daymare, I dreamt about that

terrible night when my Mother was butchered to death. Her eyes, something about her eyes. They were blood red..

I woke up panting and screaming, Nesta rushed in..

Nesta: Madam

She came to me and hugged me..

Nesta: It was only a dream.. My goodness you are trembling

Me: I.. It was..

Nesta: It's okay.. It's okay, it was only a terrible dream

MELISSA

When the class was done, I went to the rest room. I locked up, took off my dress and my bra. I wet my hands and wet my breasts.

I took a video of me playing with my nipples, biting my lower lip then sent to Papa..

BISHOP MIKE

Evans: I don't know as yet but I'll find something where we can tame these dreams

Me: That's better

My phone beeped..

I checked it out..

It was a video from Melissa.. I smiled..

NOLITHA

She gave me the cup of rooibos..

Me: Thank you

Nesta: With honey and lemon to calm you down

My hand was trembling. I put the mug down.

I was engulfed by this unexplainable fear, this has never happened to me before..

.

To be continued

07

MELISSA

Papa fetched me from school so we could go car shopping. He told me he tried to get it on his own but couldn't, so we had to settle with something else. I decided to settle for an Audi A3, second hand but it was still in good shape.. He purchased it cash, and I had to take a video of me standing next to my new car.. This is beautiful, it's an easy way to go to school.. It will be delivered to the Compound before later on today..

NOLITHA

Me: I'm thinking of going down to visit my Mother's grave

Nesta: You haven't been there in a long time

Me: That's why I need to go, I think I might be having these dreams because I haven't been there in a while

Nesta: I think so

Me: Has my husband come home to talk to you?

Nesta: No he hasn't been home since you two went out for breakfast

Me: What's his schedule looking like today?

Nesta: He didn't give me

Me: That's unusual

Nesta: He probably forgot

Me: He never forgets to give out his schedule

Nesta: He'll be back

MELISSA

After our shopping spree, we went out for lunch. Reserved table for us in a private area where pictures cannot even be taken...



Mike: Do you love your car?

Me: I love it very much

It was red in colour and perfect...

Mike: Sorry I couldn't get you the mini cooper

Me: It's okay, the Audi is close enough

He nodded..

Mike: I need to ask you something

Me: Yes?

Mike: How is Zethu holding up?

Me: She's doing better now

Mike: She seemed scared, and scared people often do stupid things

Me: Like?

Mike: Like going out in public with it

Me: I don't think she will, just give her time

Mike: I need you to keep an eye on her, I cannot

afford to lose everything

Me: I know

Mike: So I'm depending on you right now

Me: I always have your back

Mike: Would you even kill for me?

I looked at him.. He extended his arm to me.

Me: If you do this, I will give you your heart's desire. I will make you my second wife, and you can enjoy the same benefits as Noli. I know that's what you want deep down

Me: And we will close the Girl's compound? Because if so then I don't want you sleeping with girls there

Mike: I promise

I took a deep breath...

Me: I will do it, I will kill Zethu for you

Mike: This is how you do it

NOLITHA

I took a deep breath and switched on the light, I went down to feed it..

I have been here a lot of times, but today it was different. I felt uneasy being here..

I walked over to take two rats and went to feed it, I looked at it. The eyes turned red, they drew me closer to the glass cage. I moved closer and looked at it, then something happened. The eyes showed me something, it reflected my Mother crying..

I took a few steps back, it's eyes changed and became normal. I hurried out and locked the door...

MELISSA

After our lunch we drove back to the Compound, I

couldn't wait for my car to be delivered..

We went to his office....

We were having a sexual moment, me sitting ontop of him on the chair whilst he moves me up and down on him whilst sucking on my tits. The sex felt different, it slapped different after the car purchase. I can't believe that I am about to have it all, have what I have been wishing for..

Being Married to such a Man, I'm going to live a comfortable life. I'm going to have everything that Noli has too. The fame also, being admired and respected. Spend my free days shopping and doing other things..

It's a dream come true..

Me: Ah.. Ah.. Ah..

He squeezed my ass, and he made me to go up and down harder...

Me: I love you

Mike: I love you too

We kissed..

NOLITHA

Nesta: Here.. It's okay

Me: Why did I see what I saw?

Nesta: You did say that you were dreaming about your Mother lately. The image of her is stuck on your mind, maybe that's why you keep on seeing her face everywhere you look

Me: Please call my Husband

Nesta: Yes Mam

She called..

Nesta: He's not picking up

Me: Try the office

She called..

Nesta: This is Nesta, May I please speak to Bishop Mike.. Okay.. Thank you, Bye..

She exhaled..

Nesta: He's not at the office

Me: Where the hell is he??

MELISSA

I was now bending over, hands balanced on the table as he took it from the back..

He spanked my ass in the process, which made it more enjoyable..

Me: Yes Papa!! Yes Papa!!

He continued fucking me from the back..

NOLITHA

Nesta: Should I call the Therapist?

Me: No.. I'm sure I'll be fine

Nesta: I'm starting to be worried about you Madam, seems like the trauma of your Mother's death is coming back to haunt you

Me: I'm okay Nesta

She nodded..

Me: He probably is with Pastor Evans, he's in town

Nesta: Yes let's believe that

.

To be continued

08

NOLITHA

Mike came back later in the afternoon. He found me in a state, He seemed to be worried about me. So much that he contacted my Therapist and scheduled an appointment for tomorrow morning. I am not all



for revisiting my past, but if these dreams are haunting me for a reason then I think it's best I see my therapist before I fall back into the cloud of depression. When he's here, he makes everything okay. Makes me even forget that I was angry at him. We were laying on the bed, I was laying on his chest. My leg across him. His hand running down up my exposed thigh, all the way to my butt.

Him just cuddling me made me feel safe, then I eventually fell asleep..

MELISSA

I was from the bathroom going to the bedroom. I overheard Zethu on a phone call, I stood at the door and listened through....

Zethu: I am scared.. Not everything is at it seems here.. I struggle to sleep, I am losing my mind. I just

wanna go back home, I don't feel safe here.. I can't really say what happened but I..

I walked in disturbing her from the call..

Zethu: I have to go Aunty.. Okay thank you.. I'll call you back again, Bye

Me: Is everything okay?

Zethu: Yes

Me: Are you sure?

Zethu: Yes

I went to my bag and took out the box of chocolates, probably her last treat that she's going to have today....

Me: Here.. I brought you this

Zethu: Thank you

Me: I know you haven't been okay, thought this would make you feel better

Zethu: I appreciate it, thank you

BISHOP MIKE

I looked at her and she had passed out. I gently moved her and got out of bed. I took my phone and went downstairs to see Nesta.

Me: Nesta

Nesta: Sir

Me: May I have a word with you?

Nesta: Yes Sir

Me: It seems like Noli is having a breakdown again

Nesta: I have noticed

Me: Tomorrow I have scheduled an appointment for

her

Nesta: I think that's a good idea

Me: Thank you for being there for her

Nesta: Yes Sir

Me: May I have a word with you?

Nesta: Yes Sir

Me: Let's go to the lounge, please bring something to drink

Nesta: Yes Sir

PROPHET NKANYISO MHLABA

I was at the gym. I like keeping fit, especially after a long day..

My name is Nkanyiso, but they call me Yiso sometimes NK. Short and sweet. I'm 35 years old and something I didn't expect happened to me.

My late Father was a Prophet, when he passed on I had to take from him. I was chosen to lead the church. Started when I was 30, had to give up my life. I am an accountant by profession and I had to quit when I started having dreams and visions..

I didn't think that my Father's gift was going to come to me, I thought it had died with him. Then one day, 3 months after his death and when we were going to have another Pastor in his church that's when I started getting dreams. Started seeing things, started hearing this voice that spoke frequently to me. At first the gift was intense, I would pray with my eyes closed, and when I send out the blood of Jesus I would actually see the blood. That was God's way of showing himself to me, made me trust him that he will be with me throughout this journey..

Our church has close to 150 members thus far, when my Father was still alive. It was a church of at

least 80, since my Oath of office. We are now sitting on 150 members..

I don't really poach nor depend on the church to support me with offering, I make money through Motivational speaking and writing spiritual books..

The tithes and offerings go to improving the church and supporting members of our church that can't make ends meet. Families that are struggling through.. The name of our church is "All Saints", the church has not only black members but white members too because it's situated in Town..

I have 2 Sisters, I'm the only boy. The first born unfortunately passed on after giving birth due complications. Now it's just me and my younger Sister, she's 29. Married and have a beautiful life. I currently live with My Mother and my Niece Ella. Ella is 8 years old now.

It's just the 3 of us..

I looked at the time, it was 17:00. I have to go home and shower as I have some motivational speaking to do from 19:00-21:00..

BISHOP MIKE

Me: Don't look scared

Nesta: When someone wants to talk to you, it's serious

Me: I know

Nesta: Is everything okay?

Me: Yes.. Nesta you've been a part of our family for a long time now and I admire your loyalty

Nesta: Serving you is what I wanna do until my dying day

Me: Blessed.. Nesta we.. There's a part of our lives that you don't know about

Nesta: Sir

Me: We have a snake, a python

Her eyes widened...

Me: Noli seems to be unable to take that responsibility now, it's now falling on you

Nesta: Sir

Me: Remember where I got you? You were homeless.. This lost woman in South Africa from Zimbabwe sleeping under the bridge, wouldn't want to see you going back to that life again

Nesta: I understand Sir

PROPHET NKANYISO

I got home and my Mother was preparing dinner..



Me: Something smells nice

Mom: As always (Smiling)

Me: How are you?

Mom: I'm okay and how was gym?

Me: Gym was good as always

I looked at her..

Me: What's wrong? Something seems to be bothering you

Mom: It's nothing

Me: You know how I feel when I see you in an uneasy state

My Mother struggled with my Father's death, they were soulmates. Madly in love. She's strong but sometimes I worry about her, he was her best friend. They were always together..

Ma: It's Ubabomncane, your Uncle Gatsha

Me: What has he done now?

Ma: He's busy enforcing the issue that you need to get a wife, no Prophet can lead the church without a wife

My Uncle was not happy with my Father's success in his spiritual life. He also had a church but never the gift. His church struggled, then he closed it and joined ours. When my Father died, he was so sure that he would be ordained Pastor in our church. Unfortunately that didn't work out for him. He's a very bitter Person..

Me: I did say Ma that I'm not going to do any arranged marriage. I haven't seen the one, haven't been shown the one. God will bring me someone

Ma: Yiso I think he has a point, 5 years is too much for you not to see anyone. What about Lihle?

Me: She's a good woman but I don't see her that way

Lihle is a member of our church.. Her Father is one of the church elders..

Me: Mom when the time is right, God will send someone my way. The church seems to be accepting of my bachelor life, plus I have you

I squeezed her cheek...

Me: You help me a lot as my plus one, so does Ella

She chuckled..

Me: I'm happy that's all that matters

Mom: And that's all I want.. Go and shower you'll be

late

I kissed her on her forehead..

Me: Don't let him get to you

Mom: I won't

BISHOP MIKE

We walked down to the basement so I could show her..

Me: Don't be scared, it's in a cage. It can't escape

I walked to get one rat..

Me: You feed it two rats, 3 times a day. Like this

I went and opened the slot and put in the rat.

Me: That's all you do, it's very safe and easy

I put my hand on her back..

Me: Do you understand?

She nodded..

.

To be continued

09

MELISSA

The chocolates that I gave Zethu were poisoned..  
When we got in bed, after a few hours of laying down she started reacting to it. Moaning softly in discomfort, tossing and turning. I woke up..I turned and looked at her.

Me: Zethu are you okay?

She kept on moaning. I got out of bed and went to switch on the light, I glanced at her.

Me: Zee?

Zethu: I'm not feeling well

Me: Wgsrs wrong?

Zethu: Stomach cramps, they really painful

Me: What happened? Did you eat something?

Zethu: Not out of the ordinary, just.. Just the chocolates

I looked at her..

Zethu: Ohh my God!

I took the pillow and smathered her with it. She moved and tried to fight. She scratched my arms, I pressed down harder whilst staring at the wall. I pressed at her until she stopped moving, but I couldn't let go..

NOLITHA

Felt like I didn't sleep for centuries, I had a good night sleep.. When I woke up, I bathe to go downstairs and have dinner with the family..

Nesta and Mike were sitting at the table..

Me: Good evening

They looked at me, I sat down..

I started dishing up..

Mike: How did you sleep?

Me: I slept good

Mike: No dream? No nightmare?

Me: No

Mike: That's good.. I've made an appointment for you to see the Therapist tomorrow morning

Me: A therapist?

Mike: Yes

Me: Let's not jump the gun

Mike: I'm afraid that your dreams may be a result of trauma

Me: If they persist I will see a therapist

Mike: I'll drive you tomorrow morning

Me: I..



Mike: It's not negotiable or up for discussion

MELISSA

I finally removed the pillow. Her eyes half opened. Cheeks wet, still tears in her eyes. Mouth also slightly open.. I put the pillow under her head and then moved on to my bed. I was trembling really bad, I have just killed someone. My roommate!!

I looked at her. I got up from my bed and went to fix her hair, I fixed her so that there's no signs nor traces of foul play..

I went back to sit on the bed, I took a deep breath and closed my eyes..

Me: Ohh my God (Whispering)

NOLITHA

Mike: I have already spoken to Nesta about Python  
I looked at Nesta..

Me: How do you feel about it?

Nesta: I am naturally scared of snakes so it will take  
a while for me to adjust

Me: Nesta it's very important for you to be discreet  
about this, it's a serious family secret that no one  
needs to know about it

Nesta: I understand, I promise to be discreet and  
loyal

Mike: She understands how important this is

Nesta: Yes I do

Me: Good

PROPHET NKANYISO

I arrived at home. I was tired and sleepy.

The guests I had were around 60, not too bad. The tickets were sold at R150. I have another motivational speaking in 2 days time

This one was at night, hence why most people couldn't come. This one in 2 days time will be from 11:00-13:00. It will be on a Saturday..

When I got home, My Mother and Ella were already in bed. I went to shower so I could pray after and then go to bed.. I was tired tonight..

MELISSA

I turned her and laid her on her right side, so she could face the wall. I had also closed her eyes too..

I couldn't sleep, It was difficult to sleep in the same room with a dead Person. A Person that I've killed..

I took my phone and called Papa, he took forever to pick up..

Papa: Mel

Me: I.. I did it

Papa: You mean?

Me: I mean Zethu is gone, I took care of her

He pause for a moment..

Me: I'm scared, I'm very scared.. I can't even sleep, I even feel like I'm losing my mind

Papa: Mel calm down

Me: I can't.. It's hard

Papa: I know but this was a sacrifice for the greater good Melissa

Me: I killed my roommate (crying)

Papa: Melissa think about the life you going to have, you going to live a beautiful life. Married to me. You'll get everything you ever wanted and your family will be well taken care of, imagine yourself as a Bishop's younger wife. The respect and love from the church

Me: I know

Papa: Rest thinking about that

Me: Okay

Papa: I love you

Me: I love you too

I hung up..

NOLITHA

I walked up to the balcony where he was standing, I hugged him from the back..

Me: Are you okay?

Mike: I'm okay

He put his hands on mine, I kissed the back of his neck....

Me: Wanna come to bed?

He turned and looked at me, he leaned forward and kissed me. We kissed for a while and I grabbed his trunk..

He ran his hands on my back down to my ass and squeezed it..

I felt his dick hardening in his sweatpants.

He lowered my gown, and I crouched. I pulled down his sweatpants he wasn't wearing any underwear. I grabbed his dick and started giving him a BJ. I massaged his balls in the process.....

Mike: Ohhh Yes Baby

He ran his hand on my cornrows..

Mike: Just like that

I gave him a deep throat, almost gagged..

Mike: Come here

I got back up. He took off my night dress, I took off his vest. It was a bit chilly and I was getting goosebumps. He picked me up and walked me back

inside the bedroom..

MELISSA

I put on my earphones and blasted the volume..

I turned and looked at her, she was still sleeping in that position. Wasn't moving. I closed my eyes..

Me: For the greater good

NOLITHA

He placed me at the edge of the bed and took the pillow, he placed it under my waist. Wrapped my legs around him, holding them from my thighs, and then I helped him slide it in..



He started off slow, I grabbed both my breasts and massaged them. He increased his pace and placed his hand on my neck choking me..

.

To be continued

10

BISHOP MIKE

The next morning after dropping off Nolitha at the therapist's office. I set off to go to the Girl's compound after getting the call about Zethu, Detective Kgabo is going to be heading the case. He is on my pay roll, so he's going to make it disappear and nothing will be pinned on Melissa..

I got there right when Melissa was being questioned, Zethu's body was still on the bed. Duvet pulled up covering her face. Sister Theresa was there too comforting Mel..

Me: What happened? What is going on?

Kgabo turned and looked at me..

Kgabo: Bishop

Me: Detective

Kgabo: We've been called in, apparently one of the girls ingested chocolates that were poison she's no more

Me: What? How did she buy the chocolates? What happened?

Mel: I don't know, I came back yesterday from school. She was eating chocolates, then we went to sleep and she complained about stomach cramps. I thought it was nothing at first and.. Now she's gone (crying)

Theresa: It's okay.. It's okay

Me: Any lead on where she bought the chocolates?

Kgabo: No.. Not yet

I took off my Hat and sat down..

## PROPHET NKANYISO

This morning I made my way to the Medical center.  
The center is combined. Doctors, Psychologists, and  
Specialists..

I was here to see one of my church members, Dr  
Cirha. He had asked for prayers

As I was walking busy on my phone, I bumped into  
someone. My phone fell, together with her bag..

Me: I'm so sorry

Her: No it's okay, I'm the one who is meant to be  
sorry

Contents inside her bag fell out, we both crouched and picked them up..

Me: I hope nothing is broken

Her: Me too

Our hands touched, and I felt an instant rush. I looked at her and then I saw it, I saw the succubus.. She retracted her hand from me.

Her: I should go

Me: Yeah me too

She got up and held her bag..

Her: Sorry again

Me: It's okay

She walked away and I looked at her..

BISHOP MIKE

Kgabo and I walked out to my office..

Kgabo: Relax, I've got this

Me: Melissa cannot go to jail

Kgabo: Melissa is not going to jail, I'll make sure for it. She almost pulled off the perfect murder except that the girl scratched her. But the better part of it is that, her scratching was not intense to peel off Melissa's skin. This will be a classic case of poisoning, an unfortunate mistake. No investigation, no autopsy required unless otherwise the family senses foul play wish for investigation to be carried out

I poured the whiskey..

Me: Her Grandmother is old, I doubt she will ask more questions

Kgabo: Then that's good

NOLITHA

I sat on the chair waiting to be called in.

I couldn't stop trembling, when that guy touched me I felt this burning sensation throughout my body like fire burning me. I looked at my hand, it was still trembling. Heart racing and I had this fear..

Reception: Mrs Mwangi the Dr will see you now

Me: Thank you

I got up and went to the Dr's office..

MELISSA

Sister Theresa gave me the glass of water..

Me: Thank you Sister

Theresa: Melissa you are a very brave girl, I know if you could've, you would've helped her

Me: I can't believe that this is happening, Zethu was young and full of life

Theresa: I understand, it's going to be okay. We going to get through it, together

I nodded repeatedly..

Theresa: Let's go, I think they done with the questions. I think we should move you to another room

Me: Yes thank you

NOLITHA

He walked in..

Dr: Mrs Mwangi, thought I'd never see you again

Me: Me too

Dr: It's good to see you again though, at least it shouldn't have been under this circumstances

I nodded..

Dr: So Bishop tells me that you have troubling dreams?

Me: Yes..

Dr: Mind sharing

Me: I dream about my Mother

He nodded..



Dr: Could you please elaborate further?

Me: Nothing much, that dreadful night

Dr: When did they start?

Me: Maybe 2 days ago

He got my file..

He sat down..

Dr: Do the dreams disturb keep you from sleeping?

Me: Yes

MELISSA

Bishop Mike walked in..

Mike: Mel

I looked at him..

Mike: How are you feeling?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Theresa: I decided to have her change rooms in the meantime

Mike: I think that's a good idea

Theresa: I'll go get her something more warmer to wear

She walked out..

Mike: You did great

Me: Why does it feel so wrong?

Mike: Because you not used to it

Me: I just want to... I just want this to go away

Mike: It will.. With time

Me: Yes

Mike: So are you ready? Ready to join my family?

Me: I'm ready

Mike: Good

.

To be continued

Yesterday we failed to reach target for the bonus,  
hoping today we will manage

: 11

## PROPHET NKANYISO

When I got home later on, in my small indoor office I prayed. Prayed for almost an hour and the Holy Spirit revealed it to me. What was revealed in a vision, I couldn't believe it. This Lady that I bumped into earlier on, The Succubus when I prayed on her and why it happened like that I was shown her in a white dress, walking down the aisle to me.

In simple terms, She is my future wife..

Sometimes I think that God has a dark sense of humor, especially when it comes to us spiritually gifted People. Nothing of us is ever straight, nothing of us is ever easy..

I was shown that to get to the aisle, it's not going to be easy. She's a succubus after all, or will be one..  
Nolitha Mwangi that's the name that was whispered to me..

I checked her and she was a popular somebody. Married to a very wealthy and popular Bishop that is very much invested in the dark world, my spiritual archenemy. Bishop Mike Mwangi. I don't know how I'm going to get her, but then. God works in mysterious ways, when the time is right. He will make it happen..

I took my theology book and checked more on the succubus..I put on my reading glasses, my eyesight is not too impressive.

"A succubus is a demon in female form, that appears in dreams to seduce men, usually through sexual activity. According to religious traditions, repeated sexual activity with a succubus can cause

poor physical or mental health, even death. In modern representations, a succubus is often depicted as a beautiful seductress or enchantress, rather than as demonic or frightening. The male counterpart to the succubus is the incubus."

I took off my glasses...

BISHOP MIKE

I knocked at his door..

Him: Come in

I walked in, he got up from his chair..

Dr Langa: Bishop

Me: Dr Langa

We exchanged a handshake..

Langa: I already feel the anointing, I'm even getting goosebumps

Me: Please sit

He sat down, I took off my hat and sat down too..

Langa: It's not everyday that one gets such visits

Me: Blessed

I played with my hat..

Me: I'm here because I desperately need your help

Langa: I'm listening

Me: My wife came?

Langa: She did

Me: Blessed.. I need you to do something for me, no questions asked

Langa: I'm still listening

Me: I need you to prescribe my wife some medication, put her back on meds

Langa: I don't think she's at the level of taking antidepressants again, at least not after a thorough psychiatric evaluation

Me: Not antidepressants, but medication that will drive her clinically insane give her seizures

Langa: I don't understand

Me: I want to take a second wife but you know how it is with women. Jealousy, hurting each other. I don't want my wives trying to hurt each other and end up killing each other, so if one is unstable then it works



better

Langa: I respect you a lot Bishop, but this.. This is career suicide. If it ever goes out, If she does tests and it is founded that she has drugs in her system that shouldn't be there I could even go to jail

Me: There's a lot of things that you've done previously that can end you up in jail, I have your file remember? How you have sexually assaulted your Patients, taking advantage of their mental unstable state?

He leaned back..

Me: I'm glad we understand each other

I stood up and put my hat on again and walked out...

NOLITHA

I couldn't stop thinking about that incident I had earlier on with that guy. He was good looking no lie but I don't understand why my body trembled, why I started feeling like I was burning, why I had so much fear deep within. Who is he? What power does he possess that had such an impact on me?

Nesta: Madam

I freaked out..

Nesta: I'm sorry, I didn't mean to scare you

Me: It's alright

She sat down..

Me: Are you okay?

Nesta: I've worked for you and your husband for a

very long time. I've been asked to do things that were beyond my capabilities without even complaining

Me: I know and we are truly grateful

Nesta: But this.. Feeding the snake, I don't think I can do this. Something about that snake that sends shivers down my spine, that gives me fear

Me: I know.. I've also been feeling the same way lately when I feed it

Nesta: Something about it's eyes that makes your heart go cold

Me: I know Nesta

Nesta: If it's okay.. I'd like to not engage in such

Me: I understand.. I'll talk to my husband

Nesta: Thank you Mam

PROPHET NKANYISO

I called a dear friend in Christ, he's a Bible scholar and an exorcist. He isn't a gifted exorcist, he learned how to exorcize..

Clover: Nk

Me: Clover

Clover: How are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Clover: I'm good too

Me: How is it going? Done any exorcisms lately?

Clover: I am taking a break, the last one was very emotionally draining

Me: I can imagine

Clover: This is not a social call I presume?

Me: Not at all.. Not at all dear friend

Clover: What can I do for you? How can I help?

Me: I need information on something, have you ever

ran into a case of a succubus?

He whistled..

Clover: That's heavy

Me: I know

Clover: I've never ran into one

Me: Your educated input?

Clover: Be specific

Me: Can a woman be possessed by one?

Clover: I believe so but not randomly, the demon has to be conjured and made to possess that specific female

Me: And will she harm in sexual dreams?

Clover: No because the succubus will take over her human form, any Man that engages in sexual intercourse with her will definitely be harmed and eventually die

Me: That's heavy

Clover: Why are you interested? Something happened?

Me: No I was just asking

Clover: NK..

Me: I.. I think I'm going to run into someone who is a succubus

Clover: That's insane

Me: I know, and I'll need your help

Clover: I'm always game

MELISSA

Theresa: Mpho.. Melissa will be your roommate in the meantime

Mpho: I understand

Theresa: She's had a very traumatic experience

please help her with everything that she needs and be kind

Mpho: Yes Sister

Theresa: Melissa.. If you need anything don't be scared to ask, we are here for you we are family

Me: Thank you Sister

Theresa: Mpho please help her move her things from her room

Mpho: Yes Mam

Theresa: Lovely

She walked out..

Mpho: I'm so sorry you had to go through that

Me: Thank you

She walked up to me and hugged me..

NOLITHA

Dr Langa called me..

Me: Dr

Dr: Mrs Mwangi

Me: Is everything okay?

Dr: Yes.. I was wondering if you can come tomorrow morning

Me: Why? I thought that our next appointment was in two days time

Dr: Yes but I am afraid that your trauma is being triggered again and I will have to put you on antidepressants before it gets bad

Me: I thought we agreed that I won't be on medication anymore, I'm not comfortable with that

Dr: I understand but it's for your safety

Me: I understand.. I'll come through



MELISSA

Me: You can take that

Mpho: Okay

I looked at the empty bed and the picture of her laying there still kept on running in my head..

Mpho: Hey

I looked at her..

Mpho: You don't have to be here, I can move all your things

Me: No it's okay..

.

To be continued

12

MELISSA

[2 WEEKS LATER]

It was difficult, It was very difficult but I was slowly adapting to what I've done or what I've been subjected to do. I take meds that help me with anxiety and depression, so my moods were improving..

Mike said I have been seen each other a lot lately, following what I did. We've been seeing each other in secret though, haven't made anything public. He said we will, all in due time..

I was excused from school, I'll be going back soon though now I'm just enjoying the minor break..

I was out with Mpho doing shopping, it was a Friday Morning. Bishop Mike sent me some money, decided to go shopping..

The dress code is still dresses and skirts, mostly white since we took an oath of purity but I felt like buying Jeans. Would like to wear Jeans, see how they fit me and how they look on me..

Mpho: We can't buy that, let alone wear that

Me: I know, I'll wear them in the bedroom in secret

Mpho: I don't know Mel, it's against the rules. I don't wanna end up in trouble

Me: You won't because I won't walk out with them

Mpho: If you say so

I took the pair of Jeans..

NOLITHA

I wasn't feeling well. I don't know what's happening to me lately, but I wasn't feeling well. I hallucinate a lot, I see things. I have had at least 3 seizures in the past 2 weeks.

I hardly sleep, I am always fearful I don't even know why..

Nesta: Madam

Me: Nesta

Nesta: Your breakfast is ready

Me: Thank you

Nesta: I'll get your meds too so you can drink after eating

Me: Okay

She walked to the staircase..

Me: Am I losing my mind?

Nesta: Madam?

Me: Feels like I'm losing my mind, Am I?

Nesta: Well I.. I don't think so, I just think you going through a lot and the medication will help together with therapy. Scars of that traumatic experience are coming back

Me: I just wanna be okay again

Nesta: You will be.. We will get through it

Me: I appreciate you being here

Nesta: It's okay

PROPHET NKANYISO

I was doing Motivational speaking at this other church for their youth service..

Young People suffer a lot from depression, some of

their realities are the reason why they sink into a depressing state. Not being where you are or where you want to be, seeing your peers succeeding and you stuck in the same place. Home environment not welcoming enough and contributing more to your depression. They go through a lot I believe, so much pain that they end up resorting suicide..

Me: This morning, I would like to talk to you not as a Prophet but as a human being. Just Pals talking, because I'm sure half of you sitting here have lost faith in God. You've been to church, you've heard all the sermons but still you ask "This God they preach about, this God that is said to be more powerful isn't powerful enough to change my situation". I can preach God now until the end of our session and you will still go out of here, go back home and sink into your ball of depression.

It was very quiet as they listened..

Me: A well informative Neuroscientist once said "A habit is when you've done something so much that your body knows now how to do it better than your mind". In simple terms your mind is the Master, your body is the servant. A servant always follows the Master. If you are feeling depressed and your mind says "Today we not waking up, we feeling like the world is against us" then your body will follow the Master. Your body will adapt to that routine so much that it becomes a habit. Then one day, when you decide in your mind that "Today I wanna wake up, I wanna change my reality. I wanna take a walk" your body will deny you of that because your body will have adapted to the habit and eventually you sink back into depression. You cannot change your reality until you heal your mind. You cannot beat depression until you heal the wounded, and that's your mind. How do you heal your mind? By changing the way you think. It's easy to think yourself into a negative situation, and it's difficult to think yourself out of a negative situation. As a man thinketh in his heart, So is he.. Whether you want to believe it or not, Your reality is very much shaped by your thoughts..

"But Prophet I didn't think myself to losing my job, I didn't think of myself to a car accident" No you didn't, but you attracted those situations by other negative thoughts that you had. Repeated negative thoughts only attract more negative situations. What am I saying? What I'm saying is that it's not easy to think yourself out of a negative situations but you can do it with positive affirmations. Write affirmations, read them everyday until your mind adapts to them. Write them in present tense. Instead of saying "I will be successful" write "I'm successful". Read it every morning, read it every night. Overtime your mind will start renewing your faith, positive things is what you will attract. A positive mind attracts only positive things. The honest truth is that you cannot bottle yourself up with negativity and expect to gain positive things. You can't plant an orange tree and expect apples. You will get oranges.. Unfortunately if you think that you wont make it, then you won't. If you think that you will make it, then you will. You are always right and that's the unfortunate truth..



## NOLITHA

After eating breakfast, Nesta gave me my meds. I drank and then I tried to sleep whilst watching TV. I fell asleep in the process of watching, and I had the most terrible dream.

I dreamt as I was sleeping on the couch, just as I was sleeping and python was crawling on the floor from down the staircase all the way to the lounge. It's eyes were red, and I couldn't move on the couch..

It got to me and coiled itself from my legs all up to my waist. It had a firm grip, breaking my bones from my legs all the way up..

I was suffocating, I couldn't breath. When it went up to my upper body, it tightened so much that I struggled to breath. It's head came up to my face, then her mouth opened up wide to swallow me..

I woke up screaming in terror, Nesta ran to me..

Nesta: Madam!!! Madam wake up it's okay, it's just me.. It was a dream, it was only a dream

Me: Ohh my God!! Ohh my God it felt real!!

She hugged me tight..

Nesta: It's okay.. It was just a dream

Me: It felt so real

Nesta: I know.. I'm sorry.. I'll call Papa

BISHOP MIKE

I was in a meeting with the church elders at church. We were running through our books, trying to see how we were with our church duties..

Elder 1: We have 5 more families added to the monthly grocery list

Me: Did you get evidence? That indeed they are struggling financially

Elder 1: Yes.. Here are the documents

He passed them to me..

Just when I was about to look at them, my phone vibrated..

It was a call from Noli..

Me: Mi Amour

Nesta: Sir

Me: Nesta?

Nesta: I'm sorry to disturb but it's about Madam

Me: What's the problem now?

Nesta: Another bad dream

Me: It's happening again?

Nesta: I'm afraid so

Me: Okay I'm coming

Nesta: Thank you Sir

I hung up and looked at them..

Me: Gentlemen I'm sorry, I have to go home

Elder 2: Everything okay?

Me: No.. I'm afraid not.. I've been trying to downplay this, didn't wanna alarm the church but.. My Wife has

been having problems lately, her mental state is not okay

Elder 3: That's sad

Me: Hence she's been missing church and her commitments, I've tried to shield her and protect her but now.. I'm at the ledge, I don't know what to do.. I'm trying to get her help both spiritually and psychologically

Elder 2: We understand

Me: I'm grateful you understand

Elder 1: I guess we will have to continue this meeting some other time

Me: Yes please

Elder 2: Bishop I don't want to sprung this on you but can't herd the church without a wife

Me: I know.. I'm working on it

Elder 3: I also don't want to say this but if it persists, You might be forced to take another wife

I wanted to hear thar, I desperately wanted to hear that..

Me: I love my wife, I don't want to hurt her in that manner

Elder 1: Understandable but.. You need a strong wife by your side

Elder 2: She leads the Youth service and the sessions for women

Me: I know but please.. Can I be given time, I'm sure my wife is going to kick back

Elder: You have a week

Me: Thank you

## PROPHET NKANYISO

I stood at the door as they were going out just giving them handshakes..

Me: God bless you

I was up to the 8th one, the boy who followed next. I shook his hand and I got a vision instantly, it just flashed through..

Me: May we please talk? 5min? If you not in a hurry?

He nodded..

We walked in and sat down..

Me: I'm sorry

He looked at me..

Me: May I be given permission to help?

Him: Yes

Me: When I shook your hand I saw you in the spirit world. Physically you seem fine, but emotionally and spiritually you are very wounded. People lose weight, people get sick physically from stress and I saw you in that way spiritually. You are naked, thin and in pain

He glanced down at his hands and his lips trembled..

Me: You are not useless, I know you feel that way but you are not. God doesn't create useless, you are



important in the cycle of life hence why you were created. I know you have been sending out CVs, I know how your family looks at you as if like you are useless just because you not working. You spend most of your days sitting in a corner avoiding being at home

He wiped his tears..

Him: I'm tired, I want it all to end

Me: You are being rejected because God has a better plan for you, a bigger plan and a better job for you but as you still waiting on him. He's also waiting on you, waiting you to stop relying on you and what you think know and trust him.. That vacancy the last one, where you sent out your CV and said "Only God knows", indeed he knew. That's where he wanted you, wanted you to have stopped relying on yourself so he can show you his glory. That's the job that you going to get mainly because you just applied and

didn't think you will get because you thought you were not qualified for it, but already heaven certified you, and you will get the job. Monday you will get it

Him: Prophet please don't raise false hopes

Me: Herees what we are going to do, I'll give you my number. You give me yours, if Monday passes and you don't get a call for an interview then call me and I'll confidently tell you that yes the God I've been serving so long doesn't exist, I'll think myself as a false prophet. The God I know, that I've been serving. The one and only Jehova, I know he has never disappointed me and I know this prophecy is very true.. I can vouch with my life

NOLITHA

Me: My heart, it's beating too fast.. I'm going to have a heart attack.. I can't breath!

Nesta: Madam try and breath

I got up with my hand on my chest..

Nesta: Madam

Me: Nesta I don't feel goo, I can't breath.. I'm having a heart attack

She came to me..

Nesta: Madam!

Me: I'm dying

Nesta: Please calm down.. Ohh my goodness where is Papa!

.

To be continued

## SIDE NOTE:

Nothing much Beloved. Mark did it again, been struggling this weekend to get the Admins but we ended up being sorted, hoping my parody account won't be blocked too as I've managed to get one finally which I'll be posting through it until mine is unrestricted because the time frame between me and my Admins is not aligned. So it causes a lot of inconvenience with posting..

My apologies but I really don't understand what up against my accounts getting restricted it's becoming a constant annoying habit now

All inserts owed will be delivered with immediate effect

## BISHOP MIKE

Noli was admitted, she had a severe case of a panic attack. Something not serious but can be if it becomes frequent, and resorts to a Panic disorder. Basically a Panic disorder, your brain cannot distinguish between real and false danger. Any stress pressed upon you can trigger the flight and fight response, your body reacts and then you have a full blown panic attack. Sweaty palms, A racing heartbeat, hyperventilating which is breathing abnormally due to the fact that your chest is closing in. Feelings of losing touch with reality. It cannot drive you insane, nor can it kill you but it is uncomfortable..

The Dr explained that to us, and he will prescribe meds for her to control it before it interferes with her daily life making it impossible for her to function like

a normal Person..

I held her hand..

Me: Hey.. At least it's not a serious condition and they'll keep you for a day. Tomorrow morning you'll be coming back home

Tears streamed down her face..

Noli: I don't know what's happening to me, it feels like I'm losing touch with reality. Like my mind is turning against me

I kissed her hand..

Me: We will get through it, together

I made sure that she was very comfortable, in a presidential suite. A TV, her own bathroom and everything within her reach. Better prepared food, though it was only for one night. It was expensive, 9k..

Me: I have to go let you rest

Noli: Please don't leave me

She held tight to my hand..

Me: I have to go, I have other commitments

Noli: You can't just lay off on them for a day? I'm your wife I should come first

Me: Noli we've been through here before remember?

And we made it work. We will make it work, I just need you to hold on just for one day it shouldn't be hard

I placed my hand on her forehead..

Me: Just for one day.

MELISSA

Bishop requested that I spend a night at what is going to be my new home soon. Wifey is said to be at the hospital, she was admitted. He has been complaining about her lately, that she is dragging. She's having some mental issues.. He needs some stress reliever.

I lied to Sister Theresa that I'm visiting home, she knows about Bishop Mike. She knows what he is



doing to us but I don't want her too much in my business..

I took an Uber and it drove me straight to the location. He had sent me the location..

His house was indeed beautiful, I could live here. I could find a home here..

I was welcomed in by a woman named Nesta, she is the house servant in charge. She was beautiful no lie, too beautiful to be in this house. She's a temptation waiting to happen..

Nesta: Welcome

Me: Thank you

She took my bag from me..

Nesta: I've prepared the guest room for you

Me: Ohw I don't wanna sleep there, I wanna sleep in the main bedroom

Nesta: The Main bedroom? That's.. That's where Madam sleeps, It's sacred

Me: I don't care... I am meant to be here and you are meant to take orders from me, don't make this difficult

Nesta: Yes Mam

Me: Then come back and prepare something to eat for me

Nesta: Yes Mam

NOLITHA

I cannot believe that Mike left me, he knows how much I need him here with me. He knows how difficult this is for me..

I couldn't stop crying, how is it? How is it that all of a

sudden my mind is turning against me. How is it that I don't recognize who I am anymore..

I walked to the bathroom and looked at myself in the mirror, I wiped the tears..

I looked at myself and I was mad, mad that I cannot control myself. I cannot be sane..

I punched the mirror whilst screaming, I kept on punching it and punching it..

MELISSA

I looked around, she has taste no lie.. I'll give her that..

Nesta came back down..

Nesta: What would you like for me to prepare for you?

Me: Anything that I'm going to enjoy

Nesta: Yes Mam

Me: When is my Husband coming back home?

Nesta: I'm not sure

Me: Okay.. Get on with it then

NOLITHA

The Nurse walked into the bathroom..

Nurse: Ohh my word, what are you doing?

I was now sitting on the floor at the corner, the mirror had cracked and my hand was bleeding very bad..

She helped me up..

Nurse: Let's go back to bed

We walked to the bed..

She helped me get in..

Nurse: I'll call in for a med kit to be brought for your hand so I can help you.. Goodness are you trying to kill yourself child? That's not the way to go

MELISSA

She brought me the plate..

I looked at it. I took the fork and tasted, I spat the food out..

Me: This is horrible!

Nesta: This is the most loved dish in the house

Me: The most horrible dish I've ever tasted, exactly what do you do here?

Nesta: Can I prepare you something else?

Me: No you useless.. Leave me

She took the plate and walked away..

I spat on the floor..

Me: Then come clean this up!

BISHOP MIKE

The plan was working, it's coming together so perfectly..

I arrived at home and Melissa was sitting at the table..

Me: My Love

She got up from the chair, and made her way to me..  
She hugged me and gave me a kiss.

Mel: I was already missing you

Me: I'm glad you here

Mel: I'm glad to be here

Me: Where is Nesta?

She broke the hug and looked at me..

Mel: I don't know where she is, She's.. This Nesta girl  
I don't like her

Me: Why?



Mel: Your blood and Mine don't mix

She placed her hand on my chest..

Mel: Please get rid of her as soon as possible

.

To be continued

14

**BISHOP MIKE**

To my surprise, Nesta hasn't fed the snake. That is very unacceptable. The snake is not supposed to die other than if it dies on it's own, when it's time comes. A hand involved will resort to my riches vanishing. My hard earned money and riches..

I was livid, I told her nicely that she's supposed to feed it. Take over since Noli is not alright, if I wasn't busy I'd do it myself everyday..

Nesta: Sir I'm sorry, I spoke to Madam and she said she was going to talk to you. I cannot do this, I don't have the conscience to do it

She was naked, facing the wall..

I was holding a sjambok and whipping her.

We were in her cottage..

Nesta: I'm sorry.. It won't happen again

I continued whipping her over and over until the skin from her back started to peel off. I went down to her

thighs, halfway through her legs started to tremble. She peed on herself and then lost balance, falling to the floor. I stretched my arm as it was getting painful..

NOLITHA

I had been sedated, so that I could get some rest. I did but not for long.. I woke up in the afternoon..

I know how this works, if I completely have a mental breakdown then I'll be sent to a mental institution for 6 months. I have to be strong, I cannot let my mind play games on me..

The Nurse was sitting on the small couch when I woke up, she was glued to her phone. She was watching something..

I cleared my throat. She looked at me and paused the video..

Nurse: Mrs Mwangi?

She came to me..

Nurse: How are you feeling?

Me: Still drowsy

Nurse: Try to rest more

Me: I tried but I keep on being woken up by a Panic attack

Nurse: How bad is it?

Me: Not that bad, it comes and goes

Nurse: Compared to when you came in?

Me: Yes

Nurse: You are a spiritual person and I don't normally do this with most patients especially the ones that don't believe but.. I listen to Prophet Nkanyiso Mhlaba he's very well spoken and touches a lot on such things as depression and anxiety

Me: Motivational videos don't help much

Nurse: He's different you should try listening to one of his sermons on YouTube.. Here

She got my phone from the drawer..

Nurse: Your husband brought it with, to keep you company when he brought you in.. Let me leave you to watch one video and then I'll come back with your lunch

I took my phone and searched him, I found his videos on YouTube..

MELISSA

I was on the phone with my Mom, I told her the good news..

Ma: Wow Melissa are you sure?

Me: Yes I am, he chose me out of all the girls in the compound to be his second wife

Ma: Look at God.. I know there's a huge age difference but Bishop Mike is very anointed, mature and he won't play you like these young boys. Your future is secure with him and so is the future of the kids you going to have with him plus Mrs Mwangi is a spiritual woman, there won't be any witchcraft involved or her trying to hurt you

Me: That's very true, I'm sure we will get along very well

Ma: Be good to her too

Me: I will.. I promise

Ma: That's all I wanna hear

NOLITHA

I was 5min into his video, he looked very familiar. Despite that, he's sermon touched the deepest part of my heart. I couldn't help but shed tears, he was well spoken and his words they heal the soul. He was speaking on fear, something I needed to hear

especially in my state..

"You don't have to listen to your mind at all times, because the mind is a well of all good and bad thoughts. Any bad thought that comes into your mind, don't believe it. Just thank it for it's opinion and keep moving. Your mind will say the dream you have is too big to achieve, but your dream is not too big for God. Already when you were born, there was a promise that came with your birth. For I alone know the plans that I have for you, plans to prosper you and not to harm you. Once you give in to negative thoughts, they will give you fear and anxiety and you will see yourself not being able to achieve your dreams. Courage doesn't exist without fear. Fear is unsettling but for courage to take place, fear needs to exist. Being courageous is being afraid of doing something but doing it anyway. Having faith is being afraid of the dreams you have, but having faith and belief anyway that you will achieve them. You can achieve them because of the promise "For I alone know the plans that I have for you, plans to



prosper you and not to harm you"

Me: Wow

I wiped my tears..

The Nurse came back..

Nurse: Are you okay?

I paused the video..

Me: Wow you were right.. He is something

Nurse: I told you, you listen to him.. You will beat this without even medication, therapy and all that

I nodded..

Me: That's true

MELISSA

Mike walked into the house...

Me: Papa, where have you been?

Mike: I was outside getting fresh air

Me: Okay

He held my hands..

Mike: Melissa I love you, and being my wife comes with a lot of challenges. A lot of things that you will have to do, loyalty, respect and keeping your mouth shut at all times

Me: I understand

Mike: I need your full understanding and oath of secrecy

He put his hand on my cheek..

Mike: Especially since my wife is sick

Me: I understand Papa, I promise you that I'll be a good wife

Mike: Blessed (Smiling)

NESTA

My body was aching so bad, I had to drag myself to the bathroom because the urine in between my legs

was starting to itch..

It's hard being a woman from a foreign country that came here illegally. This Man took me in, gave me stability. A home, a job. I'm able to send money home to my Parents, Kids, and Siblings but at the same time. He can be evil, he can be extremely evil..

NOLITHA

After eating and my afternoon bath, I kept on watching more videos. Commented on the comment section, I just kept on watching. They were soothing and can revive your spirit. I watched up until I slowly drifted to sleep..

.

To be continued

Lol picture him without the earring.

15

PROPHET NK

I got a notification, YouTube notification that someone commented. I checked "Nolitha Mwangi" had commented on a few of my videos. I couldn't believe it, I did say that God works in mysterious ways and when he has intended someone for you it will happen..

I replied to her comments, not something to push her off but a mere thank you..

MELISSA

We had finished eating dinner, we thought that we could spend the remaining time of our night bonding sexually..

We weren't in the bedroom, we were in the living room. I was sitting ontop of the table, he was in between my legs. We were kissing, his hands on my thighs. My hands running down his chest..

He moved his hand and stuck it in between my legs as we continued kissing..

I parted my legs more to give him enough room.. He rubbed his hand against my coochie, I moaned..

He moved down and kissed my neck, I lowered my hand to his crotch and massaged him until I felt him coming rock hard in my hand....

He takes pills to help him, I don't mind so long he satisfies me sexually..

He stuck his finger deep inside of me and started finger fucking me..

NOLITHA

When I woke up and felt a panic attack seeping through, I quickly watched one of Nk's videos. I was even surprised he replied to my comment..

This one in particular was talking about finding happiness within yourself, that don't go into a relationship or marriage expecting to find happiness from the other Person. If you cannot make you happy, then no one will. He went on further to say that the reason why relationships tend to be detrimental is because of being emotional dependent on your partner. Thinking that you cannot live without the other Person, it's not that you cannot live without them you just don't want too. Don't jump into relationships because of pressure, wait on God. Pray on it, so that God can align you with the one he

has tailored for you. Pressuring yourself into a relationship will only get you hurt, God has tailored made someone for all of us..

The Nurse walked in..

Nurse: Here is your dinner

It was a different Nurse..

Nurse: You seem better, better than how you were earlier on

Me: I'm trying thank you

Nurse: That's the spirit

I sat up straight and leaned against the pillow as she



brought my food to me. Pumpkin, Mashed potatoes, chicken breasts, and peas with a glass of water..

Me: Thank you

Nurse: I'll come and check up on you later

Me: No problem

MELISSA

He slid it in slowly, then grabbed on tightly to my thighs.. I bit my lower lip and placed my hands on his waist..

He went in and out, the more he went in and out the more wet I got the nicer it was..

He picked up the pace, and I started to enjoy it more and more..

NOLITHA

I went through dinner without a hassle, I had already bathe and I was feeling tired..

After the last video, I got out of bed. Knelt down and started praying, that's all I got, that's all I can do in this state just pray for a better mental health..

NESTA

I had pumped myself with a lot of pain killers last night, I had also bathe with salt..

I know he was never going to get me to the Dr, I had

to improvise on my own..

I woke up this morning, I was still feeling like shit..  
Body aching, shivering and what not. I have to go to  
the house and carry out my duties so I need to be  
strong. I need this home, I need this shelter and  
security..

MELISSA

He woke me up the next morning, with breakfast in  
bed..

Mike: Good morning

Me: Papa

He kissed me on my cheek..

Mike: How are you doing this morning?

Me: I'm doing great thank you, and how are you?

Mike: I'm good

Me: Thank you for the breakfast in bed

Mike: You welcome

He sat next to me..

Me: I'll have to brush my teeth first

He looked at me..

Mike: You had a nightmare last night, about Zethu

Me: Ohw

Mike: I think we should contact the Therapist so you can be prescribed something that can help you sleep at night

Me: I think that's a good idea

Mike: Go brush your teeth so you can come back and eat breakfast then I'll drive you back

Me: Okay

NOLITHA

I was going home this morning.. I hope Mike will fetch me seeing that it's a Sunday and he has to be at church, the Hospital doesn't really discharge on weekends but I wasn't meant to be held here for long, it was just for overnight..

The attacks were still there but I tried my out most best to ignore them, each came at a space of 10-15min..

They very uncomfortable, scary and make you feel like you having a heart attack. I hope I get through this soon..

.

To be continued

No edits

## NOLITHA

Mike was awfully quiet as we drove to the house, so much unlike him..I tried holding small talks but it didn't work, he would just give me one word answers and that would be it...

We arrived at home, it was quiet too. Usually Nesta would be moving around doing this and that..

Mike: We need to talk

He seemed serious..

Me: About?

Mike: Please sit down

I sat down.. We sat at the dining table..

Me: What is it? What's going on?

He stretched his hand out to mine..

Mike: You know that I love you, I love you more than anything in this world

Me: I know

Mike: But we cannot shy away from the fact that I am a Bishop, I have a huge responsibility weighing on my shoulders

Me: Are you relieving me from my church duties?

Mike: No.. But I do need someone strong behind me, that's why I spoke with the elders at church. We all came into an agreement that it would be beneficial for me and the church if I.. If I take a second wife

Out of everything that I had imagined us talking about, this was not on my mind. I withdrew my hand from his..

Me: You wanna replace Me? You wanna take a

second wife?

Mike: I am not replacing you, you are my Queen

Me: It doesn't look like that to me.. Yes I'm having a bad day, Yes I'm..

Mike: A bad day? This is not a bad day. You are going through a lot, you are losing your mind. Look now, I was supposed to be at church preaching but I'm here having to attend to you. The congregation look forward to my preaching, someone had to take over. People might stop coming.. You are not well Nolitha!

Me: Ohw wow.. I cannot believe this, I cannot believe you doing this to me

Mike: Nolitha stop being selfish! I'm not asking for a



divorce here, I'm asking you to be okay with the situation. If you've ever loved me, then you will let this happen

Me: You should've just given me away to my Family when Mom died

Mike: Don't start with the Emotional blackmail please!

Me: So where are you going to get her? From the church?

He kept quiet....

Me: My word! You've already gotten her haven't you?

Mike: I have taken a liking to some girl

Me: Have you been seeing her? Have you two been having an affair?

Mike: Nolitha it's not like that

Me: I need to go and sleep, I am having a panick attack

I got up and walked upstairs...

PROPHET NK

I was in my office preparing to go in, I'll be taking the pulpit exactly at 11am..

I looked at the time, it was 10:45am..

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

The door opened and Dikeledi walked in, one of worshipers. She also cleans my office..

Dee: Prophet

I looked at her..

Dee: Ready to go in?

Me: Yes I am

Dee: Let me take your Bible and go put it on the pulpit

Me: You don't have too Dee, I'm very capable of holding my own Bible.. But thank you

She nodded..

Dee: I'll take the water

Me: Dee

She looked at me..

Me: You are a very lovely woman and I'm grateful that you help around here, but I need you to understand that nothing is going to happen between us. I don't want you walking around with the hope that maybe some day you and I can.. You know

Dee: I understand

Me: I'm glad you do

NOLITHA

I tossed and turned in bed with tears streaming down. My family disowned me, my Mother's family. When they learned about my union with Mike, they found it taboo and a disgrace.. Mostly their feelings of discomfort came from the fact that I agreed to marry Mike. It wasn't forceful, it was out of my own account..

As I laid down, I felt myself struggling to breath. My chest walls were closing in, heart racing and abnormal breathing. I got up and got out of bed.. Felt like I was going insane.

With Mike's state of finance, he assured me that I would be well taken care of. After matric, I never saw the need to further my studies let alone get a job..

I walked out of the bedroom, and made my way downstairs. Nesta comes close to being a friend, the only Person that I trust..

I knocked at her door, I heard a faint voice that said "Come in".. I made my way in..

Me: Nesta?

I proceeded and she was laying in bed by her stomach.. I saw the bruises on her back..

Me: Nesta!! What happened?

She didn't say anything, she broke down..

I walked to her wardrobe and took out an outfit..

Me: I will take you to the hospital, will you be able to dress?

Nesta: You don't have too, he's going to kill us

Me: Who?

Nesta: Mm.. Mike

Me: Wait what? Mike did this to you?

Nesta: Just let it be

Me: No.. I'm taking you to the hospital, come on get dressed

MELISSA

Papa was in the compound, in his office..

I dressed up, in Pants that I bought to go and see him. The girls were not around, they were at church. In church we have our own secluded sitting area. It's the church's way to attract more girls to join us, join the purity ring..

I knocked, he was standing by the window holding a glass of whiskey. I walked in and then closed the door.. I walked up to him..

Me: Papa



He turned and looked at me, I felt confident with the Pants. He placed the glass back on the small table..

Mike: Why are you wearing Pants?

Me: I went shopping with Mpho, saw these pants and I liked them

Mike: You know that you not allowed to wear Pants

Me: I thought that.. I thought it wouldn't matter

Mike: You still live in this compound, if the other girls see you they will want to wear Pants too.. A purity girl wearing pants, that's Blasphemy!

Me: I understand, I'm going to change them.. I'm

sorry

I walked out..

NOLITHA

We got to the hospital and they booked her in, I even forgot that I had a panic attack..

I sat on the waiting area..

The picture of her bruises stuck on my mind, How can Mike do something like that? Especially to Nesta. She has been nothing but good to us..

This makes me wonder what more he's capable of..

.

To be continued

17

NOLITHA

I got back home late at around 18:00. I couldn't leave until I made sure that she was okay, She was scared. She was very scared of the repercussions of the whole situation.

I had to take her to the hospital, she was in a bad state..

I was tired and hungry, I just wanted to bath and then sleep.. My Husband was home..

Mike: Where have you been? I tried calling you! You just got discharged, you are in no state to be out.. You should be in bed, you shouldn't be outside and where were you? You don't go out randomly you

always tell me

Me: I took Nesta to the Hospital

He paused for a while..

Me: I just wanna bath and rest, I have a terrible headache and I'm tired

I walked to the staircase..

Mike: This is why I am set to take a second wife, it's because of this behavior!

I stopped and turned back..

Me: What? You beat up a woman senseless then you stand there and tell me that's why you taking a

second wife? What ridiculous statement is that?

He made his way to me..

Mike: Your disrespect is what's making me think that the decision I've made is right, now I don't need anymore validation

Mike takes respect seriously, if you are his woman. You have to respect him no matter what..

Me: Don't use this as an excuse to make yourself feel better! You want to take a second wife that's all on you don't use me

Mike: Don't you dare speak to me like that!

Me: Or what?

He looked at me for a while..

Mike: Melissa will be moving in as soon as the engagement has happened, I'm popping the question soon

Me: Well then, I'll move out of the main bedroom since obviously I'm no longer wanted there

Mike: Nolitha you know what I'm capable of, don't try me! I'm warning you! And take your damn pills.. I'm going out, to eat dinner with Melissa

Me: Whatever

As I walked up the stairs, I felt my leg being pulled. I fell and rolled down the stairs to the ground. He stood there ontop of the staircase..

Mike: I am warning you!

PROPHET NK

Ma: Yiso

I looked at her..

Ma: What's wrong? It's not like you to be this quiet

Me: It's nothing

Ma: You might be a Prophet but I'm still your Mother,  
I know you better.. Not better than God but I know  
you

Me: I.. I know now who I'm supposed to Marry

Ma: You do?

Me: Yes

Ma: Who?

Me: She's very complicated for now

Ma: Wanna talk about it?

Me: Better not, I don't want you to have a bad idea of her without meeting her first

Ma: Fair enough but if she's stressing you already whilst the two of you are not together yet, what more when you are?

I chuckled..

Me: I'll be okay

Ma: I know you will be, I can't wait until she comes.. Tired of you seeing you frowning all the time, love is beautiful and I know a good woman will put a smile on your face

Me: You put a smile on my face

Ma: You know what I mean

Me: I do.. I'll go and check up on Ella



NOLITHA

My arm hurt, I've hurt my arm really bad..

I looked at the water running in the bathtub.

I could sink into the ball of depression, but I won't. I kept on thinking about Prophet Nk's videos. Kept on running them through my mind.. Especially the ones that were soul soothing..

My Husband is falling out of love with me, I could see it in his eyes..

I tried to not let that hurt me, if I allow that hurt then it will break me. I'm already broken, in all of this I have to protect my sanity...

## BISHOP MIKE

I was driving to get Melissa, Or I was being driven there..

A lot of things kept on running through my mind, many women would be throwing a fit right now. Upon hearing that their Husband wants to marry another woman. Noli, she didn't even cry at least not in my presence. Showed no sign of hurt, all I saw was anger and disrespect. When a woman no longer cares, there's someone else in the mist..

I hope Nolitha is not seeing someone else, or there's going to be hell to pay..

## NOLITHA

After bathing, I laid in bed. I had found his Instagram

account. He doesn't post much about his Personal life just Motivational videos and Bible scriptures..

I took a deep breath and sent him a DM..

Me: "Good evening

Sorry to bother you and sorry to invade

Your privacy like this, but I just wanted

You to know how much your videos are

Helping me. You are blessed and may

God keep on blessing you more"

MELISSA

After our mini altercation earlier on, I thought he was going to be mad at me. I was surprised to get a text from him asking me to go to dinner with him...

I wore a dress, it was white with black flowers. Black stockings, black boots, a white jacket and a white doek.. I can't wait to start wearing Pants, I'm still young I need to wear my age..

PROPHET NK

I knocked..

Ella: Come in

I opened the door and walked in, she coughed..

Me: Did we take our meds?

She was on her laptop..

Ella: Yes I did

Me: I don't know.. I still hear someone coughing

Ella: They make me feel tired and sleepy

Me: That's how they work, so you can be able to sleep better at night

Ella: I don't like the medication

Me: Well you have no choice, if you wanna get better and go back to school then you have to keep on taking the medication

Ella: Okay

Me: Come on let's say our night prayer and then sleep

MELISSA

The driver opened the car for me, I got in..

He closed the door. I didn't say anything..

He passed me a small box.. It was wrapped, it wasn't

too small..

Mike: Something to say I'm sorry

I took it and checked, it was a perfume..

Me: Thank you

Mike: I know it's not much, but I thought you might like it. I thought it might lighten your mood

Me: It's beautiful.. I love it

PROPHET NK

I went to the dinner table to get my phone, after I made sure that Ella was tucked in..

I had a notification, I checked. It was a DM from Nolitha. I read through.. I smiled..

I replied:

"I am grateful, thank you.."

I didn't wanna push, I didn't wanna scare her away..

.

To be continued

18

NOLITHA

I don't know why but I felt compelled to talk to

Prophet Nk, He seems like someone good to talk too. Someone with more insight, someone with knowledge. I sent him a DM again, asking if I could talk to him. He replied instantly and agreed, I dropped my whatsapp number and waited for him to say something

I waited for almost an hour, and he greeted. I took a deep breath and exhaled.

Me: May I please talk to you, in confidence?

Nk: Yes.. What we going to talk about will remain between us

Me: Thank you but can we do it with a call? So there's no traces of any conversation of this type

He sent a laughing emoji..

Nk: Okay

I called him..



Nk: Beloved

His voice was exactly what I've imagined it to be, slightly different here and there but definitely what I had imagined..

Me: Hi Prophet

Nk: Please call me Nk, Nka, or Yiso.. Just not Prophet

Me: I think Nka would be better

Nk: Whatever you feel comfortable with

Me: I am not a member of your church

Nk: I know

Me: So I hope it's not an inconvenience

Nk: Not at all, my motivational speaking doesn't circle around my church only

Me: Okay.. Thank you

Nk: You wanted to talk to me?

Me: I.. I haven't been feeling well lately

Nk: In what way?

Me: I was diagnosed with clinical depression once upon a time, it was after my Mother was murdered in front of me and they made me watch. I struggled through and I finally regained my sanity.. Eventually I had a breakdown out of the blue, I just.. I started losing it.. I'm delusional and I have panic attacks frequently

Nk: What troubles you the most?

Me: The panic attacks

Nk: You have been through the most terrible pain, I usually say that when the pain has surpassed your heart and entered your soul. You only need the one that created your soul to heal it. God was there, God saw what happened. God knew you were going to go through this. The Bible says "No temptation has overtaken you except what is common to mankind. And God is faithful; he will not let you be tempted beyond what you can bear. But when you are

tempted, he will also provide a way out so that you can endure it" - 1 Corinthians 10:13.. Meaning God will never let you go through something that you cannot handle. Whatever it is that you went through, he already knew that you were going to come out of it stronger. It happened a long time ago if I heard right, and you still here. The panic attacks that you experiencing, the depression that you are going through again is just the devil saying "You rose above it, you conquered the past, so I don't want you going to the future lightweight. You need to drag through the events of the past into your future". The honest truth that people don't understand is that The past doesn't exist, the memories of the past is what exists. The Bible says "Do not cling on to the events of the past", which means that the past doesn't exist the events of it is what we struggle with. What happened, happened that day. That day was the past, when you made it the following day it was the past it existed no more but the memories of it do. Are you still with me?

I closed my eyes as tears streamed down..

Me: Yes

Nk: So all the time when you are about to thrive or heal, the devil will always pull you back to the bottom. He will always accompany you with the memories of the past, so instead of giving in why don't you beat him at his own game? Instead of dating back to the past pain in that manner, finding pain and tears why not date back to it through a warrior's perspective? "My Mother was killed, they could've killed me too but they didn't. I made it to this age that means I'm bigger than what I went through" the more gratitude you show towards the situation and the positivity is the more you will defeat the devil. He will look at you and wonder "This beautiful lady lost her Mother, where was God when her Mother was killed? Where was God when she was robbed off her Mother? It doesn't make sense she should be crying hating and blaming God but

here she is rising above the situation?". The honest truth is that you cannot live in two realities. You cannot want to die but still living, you need to choose one. You either choose life or death, you can't choose both. You can't exist in the world of the living but dead inside, it doesn't work like that. You will go through life dead and it'll be harder to live, you gotta choose one and what you choose is what's going to determine your faith in God. Nonoki the dead belong in the world of dead, the living belong to the world of the living, that's why we bury the dead because the two cannot live together, you cannot live with a dead body in your house

Me: When I'm talking to you right now, I feel like I can make it but when I'm alone it's a different story

Nk: That's where affirmations play a crucial role, they are medication to a broken soul. After your morning prayer or if you can't pray just affirm with your mouth "It's a brand new day, another gift of life.

Many didn't get this gift it's sacred, therefore God.  
Help me to live it in the present and not in the past, I  
am willing to live today"

MELISSA

We were having a good dinner, we decided to shut  
out the world outside and focus on us.

When we were brought dessert, the plates were  
covered..

Me: Thank you

Waitress: Enjoy

She walked out..

I opened mine and I was surprised by a ring with the words "Will you marry me" jotted down with a chocolate sauce..

I didn't expect this, I thought we were still going to discuss this marriage situation in full detail. I covered my mouth with my hands.. He got up and made his way to me, he knelt on one knee and took the ring....

Mike: I have had this thought all day, I thought this would be the perfect moment.

He looked at me..

Mike: Melissa.. Would you do me the honours of being my wife

I shook my head repeatedly..

Me: Yes.. Yes.. I'll be your wife

He slid the ring through, it was a bit big..

Mike: Don't worry.. We will have it resized

He held my hand and stood me up, he hugged me and then kissed me..

NOLITHA

I laughed..

Me: You are so bold and honest!

Nk: What can I say? A beautiful yellow bone who



seems to have a lavish lifestyle sending me a DM, I thought umhlaba sowumushayile. The world is done with you and now you wanna get on with this pretty boy

I laughed..

Me: I can't believe you just said that

Nk: Well people say a Sagittarius is brutally honest and offensive

Me: You believe in astrology?

Nk: No so much but that's what has been said about me, by an ex of mine that was into these things a long time ago in high school

Me: I can't believe people let you motivate them, with that mouth I can't

Nk: You let me motivate you a few minutes ago

Me: My biggest mistake

I yawned..

Nk: Hmmmm

Me: I'm sorry

Nk: No it's okay.. I think we should call it a night

Me: Thank you for the chat feels like I've known you all my life

Nk: The feeling is mutual, maybe past lovers in a different lifetime

Me: Maybe

Nk: Good night then Beloved.. Don't forget to say your prayers

Me: I won't.. Goodnight Nka

Nk: Sweet

Me: You can hung up

Nk: You called me first

Me: Ohw yes.. Bye

Nk: Bye

I hung up..

BISHOP MIKE

Melissa has excused herself to go to the bathroom..

I checked my phone. No texts, no missed calls. Usually by now even when I'm at work or working Noli would be sending me texts or calling saying that she misses me. Tonight, it was quiet. She was quiet..

I thought of calling her but after our last fight, I restrained.. Am I losing my wife?

MELISSA

Me: He proposed Ma

Ma: Woow!! Look at God

Me: I can't believe it, I'll send you a picture on  
whatsapp of the ring, it looks expensive

Ma: I am so happy for you Nana, I'm even tearing up

Me: I have never been this happy before

Ma: I know Baby. You deserve it!

.

To be continued

Bonus to follow

## NOLITHA

Nka had sent me a pdf book on whatsapp. The book was titled "The game of life and how to play it" by Florence Scovel Shinn..

I have deleted our conversation on whatsapp, I have deleted our last call too. Just cleaned traces of him, for safety purposes..

Mike walked into the bedroom, My mood changed. Do you know how it depressing it gets when someone who has bad energy, who puts you in a depressing state feels like when they walk in? I felt exactly like that..

He came to me and got in bed next to me..

Mike: Can we talk?

I put my phone away..

Mike: What are you busy with?

I showed him the book on my file manager.

Mike: Ohw what is it about?

Me: I found it on this other group on Facebook about depression and anxiety, someone posted about it

Mike: Oh I see

Me: You wanted to talk?

He held my hand..

Mike: I feel like I'm losing my wife

Me: What makes you think like that?

Mike: Since I've been gone I didn't get the usual "When are you coming home" texts, no calls no nothing

Me: You went out to dinner with another woman, I didn't think interrupting such moment was wise

Mike: Noli.. I don't want us to be enemies over this issue.. Would you rather have me do things behind your back? I love this girl too and I thought this decision I've made was wise and I need us to be in agreement with it, the last thing I want is for you and



Melissa

To be enemies

Me: Melissa? That's her name?

Mike: I love you with all my heart

Me: I don't understand. I thought loving someone you love them in their good and bad state, you don't resort to finding someone else. If you were in a crapper right now, how would you feel if I went and got myself another Husband?

Mike: I understand where you coming from but what I do, who I am.. Nolitha it's our bread and butter, it's what puts food on the table for us. I have to maintain my standards, I have to keep up appearances and an insane wife is going to be detrimental to my image

Me: A white? I am not insane! I am just struggling through with a few mental issues but I am not insane and I'm working on that. I am a human being, I won't be perfect all the time and if your followers that you are damn well trying to impress should understand I'm sure they also have their own problems.. It's life!!

Mike: It's exactly this disrespectful attitude that makes me wanna take a second wife, I can't have a disrespectful wife because if you do you'll end up doing it in public too

Me: Ohh Mike please. Nothing but excuses! Don't make me feel guilty about this, you want to take a second wife go ahead! But don't put this on me

Mike: Give me your phone

Me: Excuse Me?

Mike: Give me your phone!!!

I unlocked and handed it to him, he was on it for a while..

Mike: I don't understand, usually when a woman acts this way she's laughing and smiling with someone else.. Why are you acting like this?

Me: I'm not a pushover

Mike: Get your shit together because you not going anywhere! This is not over until I say it is! You think you know what I'm capable of, but you really don't! Keep this up and you'll regret ever being born

PROPHET NKANYISO

It got to me that Noli and I, before we going to have our happily ever after we are going to go through a lot of trials.. Our love is going to be tested, and it's not going to be easy..

When we spoke earlier on, I felt it. Deep inside my chest got warm, we connected instantly. She has a beautiful voice, a little annoying laugh but it's soothing..

I found myself laughing alone, how am I even going to get this girl? She's married for goodness sake!!.. Whatever is going to come forth, I'm prepared for it, I hope she will be too..

**BISHOP MIKE**

I went down to see Python. She was in a bad shape, she hasn't eaten. Hasn't been fed..

I put one rat in, she didn't move....

Me: Come on

I stood there with fear creeping in, I can't lose her like this. She has to die on her own..

Me: Come on big girl

The rat ran around the cage for a while, eventually she was able to consume it. I closed my eyes and exhaled in relief..

I took two other rats to feed her, I need to have a firm grip on Noli and Melissa. I have too much to lose than let these girls do as they want. I almost lost python, this should not happen again!!

MELISSA

The next morning I prepared myself for school, I was going there with my engagement ring. Well, I haven't told anyone around here. I'm not going too, I'll let Mike do that.. I don't wanna jump the gun..

I cannot wait to make it official, today he has a meeting with the church elders to inform them about our union..

This was great, A dream come true. Who said dreams don't come true??

NOLITHA

I knocked at her door..

Nesta: Come in

I walked in holding a basket full of fruits..

Me: Hey

Nesta: Madam

Me: Noli please

I put it down..

Me: How are you feeling today?

Nesta: Still in pain but the rest is good

Me: I'm glad

Nesta: You didn't have too, Hospitals are expensive the more I stay here the more money required

Me: That's true but what's the use of being discharged when you are still unwell? You'll keep on coming back

Nesta: I doubt Mike is paying

Me: No.. I'm using my savings

Nesta: Madam.. I mean, Noli you didn't have to do this for me

Me: It's okay

Nesta: I don't wanna put you in trouble

Me: It's okay.. Don't worry about it

BISHOP MIKE

Elder 1: Melissa is from the compound, one of the purity girls.. Still a virgin

Me: I took her out last night to ask for her hand in marriage, she agreed

Elder 2: How does your wife feel about it? You are a very famous someone we don't want a scandal of



the wives catfighting

Elder 3: It'll be very detrimental to your image, we can't have that

Elder 1: Scandals can kill a church

Me: My wife is still trying to find it a bit hard to accept the change, which is normal

Elder 2: So long you'll be able to keep her in order

Me: I will I promise

NOLITHA

Nesta: Melissa.. She's a nightmare

Me: You've met her?

Nesta: I.. She..

Me: Nesta

Nesta: I don't want to get in trouble please, I've gotten into a lot of trouble already

Me: I won't say anything I promise

Nesta: When you were at the hospital, he brought her over.. For a sleepover

Me: To the house?

Nesta: Yes

I leaned back on the chair..

Nesta: I'm sorry Madam

Me: No it's okay

Nesta: What I can promise you is that it'll never work, she's young and immature.. Very immature! She can't make a good wife, she's still a kid.. I don't know what he's doing but he's definitely destroying himself and the legacy he's trying to build

Me: I understand.. Thank you Nesta

PROPHET NKANYISO

My walked in, I've prepared breakfast..

Ma: Look at this

Me: Glad you up when I'm done

Ma: At what time did you wake up?

Me: Very early

Ma: What's the occasion?

Me: I can't spoil my Queen?

I opened the chair for her..

She sat down..

Ma: What is going on?

I went and sat opposite her..

Ma: The wife situation is getting solved?

Me: Sort of

Ma: Well then.. I can't wait to meet her

Me: Me too

.

To be continued

20

NOLITHA

A WEEK LATER

This day, this particular Saturday. I was feeling like shit!.. Mike went through with this shit, today he was going to pay lobola for her. It was the biggest headline:

"Self made Bishop Mike Mwangi, taking a second wife"

He publicly made a statement, some shit press release with the elders of his church. He made me

seem insane, certified me clinically insane and as the head of one of the biggest churches in SA, he loves me too much to divorce me. So we Both, he went on to say we both agreed to this decision. Now if I come out with different feelings, people will believe that I'm indeed insane. He secretly recorded me when I was having a moment of hallucinating and a severe panic attack to support his statement. My own Husband, who has vowed to love me, support me, respect me both in sickness and health was out there humiliating me to the whole world. Not only in South Africa, but globally because he has followers everywhere..

I am still in communication with Nka, but I'm dragging my feet. He's losing me as a charge that he motivates..

I picked up the bottle and poured myself the vodka, but it was empty. Alcohol seems to numb it all, make me forget about my troubles..

Me: Nesta!! Nesta!!

Nesta: Madam

She made her way to me..

Me: I need another bottle

Nesta: Madam

Me: I don't need a 3rd degree lecture, I need a bottle

Nesta: You have been drinking since from 6am, it's now 10:00am

Me: Nesta please.. I don't need a speech, I just need..



I need a friend

My phone rang, it was Nka..

Me: Another bottle

Nesta: Yes Madam

I answered..

Nka: Someone has been avoiding me

Me: I just have a lot going on

Nka: Your husband taking a second wife?  
Humiliating you? You helping him humiliate you?

Me: Look.. You don't know me that well to even spit what you spitting!

Nka: Let me see.. 3 videos circulating. One you were completely out of your mind, two you were drunk off your mind

Me: What do you want?

Nka: You know there's nothing wrong with feeling down, depressed and what not. We human beings after all, we are imperfect and we will always have those feelings the problem is not how you feel. The problem starts when you act on those feelings. Your husband is taking a second wife, so what? If you not happy with the situation then leave! If you accept it then live with it because at the end he's doing it. Whether you drink yourself to the nearest liver cirrhosis it's not gonna change anything. You'll still wake up tomorrow and he's decision will still remain, but one thing you should never do is have excuses to

make yourself feel better about drinking. He's not responsible for that, you are! Take some responsibility

Me: You are out here throwing speeches, proclaiming yourself to be perfect whilst your kind is rotten to the core. Pastors, Bishops, Prophets you are all the same.

Acting holy but rotten inside! Can't fool me I'm sure you have skeletons in your closet

Nka: Your opinion about me does nothing to me! I'm still going to wake up tomorrow knowing my truth and who I am despite your feelings towards me. It doesn't change who I am, but it definitely changes who you are. Self dragging poisonous hate only hurts you, it does nothing to the Person you have the hate for that's the unfortunate part of it. Your own poison destroy and kills you! Whilst you drinking yourself to alcohol poisoning he is out there enjoying every moment with his new wife because your hate

and anger doesn't change who he is! The problem starts when you think you are the main problem why he chose to do this. Nonoki a man knows exactly what he wants, a man is not confused. A man can spend 10 years with you and not marry you, but goes and marries someone he's been with for 3 months. Him choosing this has nothing to do with you, you didn't drive him to do this it was his choice. He was going to do it, whether you were a good or terrible wife at the end he was going to do it. It has nothing to do with you! But you damn well giving him a reason to make it seem like it's your fault, you helping him destroy you! Alcohol only soothes the moment it doesn't eliminate the problem. You will drink but the problem will still be there, be honest with yourself! And when you are honest with yourself that's when you'll start seeing things differently! So wake up and embrace the flames because it's going to get harder from hereon until you purpose that enough is enough!!

**BISHOP MIKE**

I was out doing an interview.. I have been getting a lot of those ever since the engagement came out..

Me: My wife is having problems

Interviewer: So taking another wife is going to solve your marital problems?

Me: I am not taking a second wife because I'm trying to rectify my marriage. I love my wife and she is unwell. Quite frankly this was not even my idea nor decision but Nolitha has been forcing me to take a second wife ever since she struggled with her mental state, I was against it but at the end of the day. I love my wife with all my heart but I'm not forced to be in an emotional abusive marriage. Nolitha is hitting rock bottom, I've seeked help for her and honestly I'm at the crossroads because I don't know what to do. She's refusing to take meds,

refusing therapy and has found comfort in alcohol

Interviewer: I hear you, so what's the end deal?

Me: The end deal is that my wife will remain my wife, I'm still going to be there for her until she gets through this.. She's my wife after all!

BISHOP NKANYISO

I was streaming his live interview. The lies, the cruelty and the coldness. I cannot believe he's throwing his wife under the bus like that and Nolitha is helping him.. This trio won't end well, and I don't want Nolitha being a part of it..

Clover: Boet

I looked at him..

Clover: The exorcism is ready

Me: Good

Clover: I don't need to tell you how important it is to be spiritually and emotionally strong during an exorcism, the demon smells any weakness you are the next host

Me: A demon wouldn't possess me even if it wanted too.. Let's do this

MELISSA

It only felt like yesterday when Mike and I were both planning this....

Today it's happening. He had sent the church elders to pay lobola on his behalf, 50k in cash..

I was happy, speechless and grateful. Later on, I'll be moving to my new home. Life will be easier there seeing that Sister wife is losing it, everything is just working in my favour and I'm happy..

Ma: I'm so proud of you, you know that?

Me: I know Ma

Ma: Go out there and be a good wife, respect your husband and serve your wife duties. Don't question him, don't stress him, let him be the head at all times. Don't allow small issues to bring you back here, be strong and know that he chose you. Marriages are not easy, endure no matter what the situation and circumstance



Me: I will Ma.. I promise

.

To be continued

## PROPHET NKA

I watched as Clover Performed the exorcism, this girl has hurt herself unwillingly. She had scratches on her face, bottom lip bruised and swollen. She looked tired, her eyes showed. They were puffy and red. She was thin, she didn't look pleasant. They had to restrain her to perform the exorcism because she was out of control.

We were almost an hour into it, I wasn't doing nothing much but observing..

I decided to walk to the dressing table, saw some meds there. I looked at them, read through. Medication for schizophrenia..

I walked over to them and pulled him away, we walked out of the bedroom..

Clover: What are you doing? You don't just pull me away from an exorcism you don't see me pulling you away from the pulpit

Me: She's not possessed

Clover: She's not what?

Me: She's schizophrenic, I saw her meds

Clover: So just because you saw meds in the dressing table doesn't mean she's not possessed. What if the meds are not working because it's not schizophrenia, she's possessed

Me: I didn't feel any presence of a demon in there, you are almost 1 hour into the exorcism. This is a misdiagnosis

Clover: Misdiagnosis my foot! I am an exorcist been doing this for years. I wouldn't misdiagnose, what's wrong with you? Either you in or drive home!

MELISSA

It's good bidding your family goodbye on something good, something that they proud of you for than leaving home for all the wrong reasons. Maybe girls leave home to go cohabitate, I am leaving home in the most acceptable and respectful way. Therefore, I'm blessed in all my endeavors..

Mike had sent a driver to get me, he couldn't come. He's been busy today with interviews. He's been a famous someone, he's tried to protect my identity

throughout this whole ordeal. Told me too much popularity will mess with my head..

I really don't care about that, I care much about my newly found life and happiness..

NOLITHA

I was kneeling on the floor at the toilet vomiting. I also had a serious headache.

I got up and flushed, rinsed my mouth and walked out..

I went downstairs..

Me: Nesta.. Can you please make me a cup of coffee

Nesta: Yes Madam

Me: What are you doing with my bed linen? You washed it 2 days ago didn't you?

Nesta: Uhm.. Papa asked me to change it

Me: Why?

Nesta: Me.. Melissa is moving into the main bedroom, you moving to the guest room. I've already moved most of your things

Me: What?

Nesta: I'm so sorry

Me: It's not your fault, you are just following

instructions.. It's okay I'll make myself the coffee you can continue

Nesta: Thank you Madam

BISHOP MIKE

I have Nolitha exactly where I want her. She acted tough but I knew at some point I would break her, humiliate her until she acts right. Until she becomes my wife again, the wife I married..

I was having lunch with the elders who went to pay for my negotiations since my family couldn't..

Elder 1: She comes from a good family. Very respectful and knows how to carry herself

Elder 2: She'll make a good wife, it's good that she's young. She can still be trained

Me: I thank you gentlemen for helping me, believing in me and my decision. Wouldn't have done this without you, it was a big decision and I could've potentially lost my church if they didn't believe in me

Elder 3: You did nothing wrong, you followed through the process and there's nothing wrong with a Bishop having more than just one wife

Elder 1: Very true

MELISSA

We arrived at the house, the driver put my bags in the kitchen. He then walked out..



Me: Nesta!! Nesta!! Where the hell is that shitty maid

Instead of Nesta showing up, Nolitha did..

She stood there and looked at me, I looked at her too..

Noli: Nesta is busy with important things, you can carry your bags upstairs after all.. It's all your shit, how can your own shit be heavy?

Me: Good day.. I believe we haven't formally been introduced to each other.. I'm Melissa

Noli: I don't care who you are, you could be Virgin Marry herself I still wouldn't give a fuck!

Nesta walked in..

Nesta: Madam Melissa.. I'll take your bags upstairs

Nolitha pulled her back..

Noli: She can carry her own shit you not her maid!..  
Come, we were having lunch before we got  
interrupted

BISHOP MIKE

I got word that Melissa has arrived at home. I had to  
leave, to see how the situation was between her and  
Noli..

I bid the gentlemen goodbye and then made my way  
to the car..

MELISSA

I took the luggage bag and wheeled it upstairs on my own.. I'll come back to get the rest..

I looked at them as they sat around the table, Nolitha lifted up the mug and looked at me.

Nolitha: Welcome home

.

To be

MELISSA

My Husband walked in as I was laying in bed crying. I wiped my tears as he closed the door. He made his way to me taking off his hat. He sat on the bed next to me and placed his hand on my thigh..

Mike: You should be happy, why do you seem miserable?

Me: It's nothing

Mike: Talk to me, the last thing I want is this home environment being uncomfortable for you

Me: I.. I thought Sister Noli would welcome me with open arms, but..I had asked Nesta to help me carry my bags upstairs, Nolitha rudely intervened. Slapping me across the face, telling me that Nesta doesn't have to help me with anything and that I have to do everything on my own

Mike: That's ridiculous! Nesta is available to the both of you, she's the house maid!

Me: I am sorry.. I'll try to do things on my own so I don't step on any shoes, so I don't create drama

Mike: I'll handle it

He walked out of the bedroom..

PROPHET NKA

Clover parked the car..

Clover: How could I have missed this? How could I misdiagnose?

Me: Such things happen to the best of us too, It's easy to misdiagnose.. Schizophrenia is not that far different from Possession

Clover: Maybe I'm just being way ahead of myself, I must admit that I am not gifted

Me: You've been doing this for years, you rely on prayer, God, and your faith. It was just one incident, don't allow it to set you back. It shouldn't

Clover: Thank you for being there, if you weren't. I could've continued with it, could've incited more trauma to the girl. I would be on my way to jail now

Me: We are thankful that didn't happen

Clover: Yeah need to go back to the books study every demon there is, or at least the ones that are common

Me: You do that

NOLITHA

I was in the guest room tossing and turning. Could get any sleep..

When I opened my eyes, Mike was standing over me. He grabbed my arm in the most violent way and I fell off the bed to the floor. He dragged me out of the bed..

Me: What are you doing?

Dragged me down the stairs like I was some piece of shit. He dragged me down to the basement..

Mike: You'll stay here with Python for at least 3 days until you learn Respect! Until you respect Melissa you piece of shit! You forgetting that you have no

one. No family! Nothing! No man will even love you, all you do is contribute your vagina in this marriage nothing more. Melissa is doing medicine for crying out loud, she wants to be a surgeon! A girl younger than you having such a bright future! She compliments me well than a gold digging hoe that took after her mother!! I'll change the code on the monitor, so no one comes in except for me. I'll be working from home in those 3 days to guard you. If the 3 days surpass and you haven't gotten your shit together, you will know very well what I'm made off! This is just the beginning!!

He walked away..

Me: Mike wait!!

I crawled to him and grabbed his leg..

Me: You can't do this to me!!



He kicked me on the face with his other foot. I let go.  
He spat on me..

Mike: You disgust me!!

He left me there crying..

PROPHET NKA

When I got home, I called Noli to see how she was holding up. Her phone was answered by someone else..

Voice: Hello

Me: Uhm.. Hello who is this?

Voice: My name is Nesta.. I am Nolitha's house servant

Me: Where is she?

Voice: I don't know.. Who is this?

Me: I am.. I am a friend

Voice: Ohw

Me: Please do me a favour

Voice: What favour?

Me: Keep her phone with at all times, I just have a bad feeling about something. I'll call later to check

Voice: Who is this?

Me: A friend.. May you tell no one about this for her own safety

Voice: I'll keep it with me until she comes back

Me: Thank you

MELISSA

Mike walked in Again..

Mike: I'm sorry about what happened but I promise you that Noli will treat you better from hereon

Me: That's all I want for us to treat each other well, I have no intentions of being hateful towards her

Mike: I know my Love.. It was a beautiful day, May we please close it with a nice and delicious dinner?

Me: Yes please

Mike: I'll tell Nesta to prepare it

Me: Thank you

NOLITHA

I went to switch on the light, it didn't kick in. The only light in the room was that in Python's cage. Just a little light..

Sleeping here for 3 days with a snake that scares me

is going to contribute more to my mental instability. I was having a panic attack already, I just sat and hugged myself.

NESTA

Bishop Mike walked in..

Mike: Nesta

Me: Sir?

Mike: Please prepare dinner for Madam Melissa and I

Me: Yes Sir.. Only the two of you?

Mike: Yes.. Only the two of us

Me: Madam Noli won't be joining?

Mike: No.. She won't be joining

Me: Is she around?

Mike: Why so many questions?

Me: I'm sorry Sir.. I'll get to it

Mike: Good

He went back upstairs..

I took out Nolitha's phone and put it on silence, something is definitely fishy... Madam Nolitha wouldn't just miss dinner without a valid reason, Plus she's always indoors.. This wasn't making sense..

PROPHET NKA

Ma: You should be preparing for your Motivational speech, the biggest you've done. 350 tickets bought already, I'm proud of you

Me: Thank you

Ma: What's wrong?

Me: I think I'm ready to settle down

Ma: That's lovely to hear

Me: The Person I want, The Person I'm meant to be with is married to someone else

Ma: You not going to help a married woman cheat are you?

Me: No Ma

Ma: Look Yiso, if it's meant to be it will happen the right way. Don't force matters because you'll create a lot of havoc for yourself Me: I know.. I know

.

To be continued

23

NESTA

I refilled their wine and stepped back. They were dining just the two of them..

Mike: Thank you Nesta, we won't be needing you..  
You done for tonight

Me: Thank you Sir

I made my way out to my cottage. I took off my apron and hung it at the kitchen..

I rushed to my cottage, Took Nolitha's phone and called the "friend"..

Him: Nesta?

Me: Yes uhm.. It's me

Him: Talk to me, is everything okay?

Me: I don't think so

Him: What's wrong?

Me: I don't know but it feels like something has happened to Madam Nolitha

Him: Why would you think like that?

Me: She's gone missing. She's not in her bedroom, she was missing during dinner time. It's not like her, she doesn't have a family nor friends to go too. She's always indoors and she wouldn't go out without telling me

Him: It does sound weird

Me: I'm sorry.. What's your name?

Him: Nka

Me: So what I do?

Nka: For now you do nothing, act normal and cool



Me: I'll do so

Nka: Call me tomorrow when you get free time

Me: Yes Sir

MELISSA

Me: This was lovely, Nesta knows her way to the kitchen.. I'm worried

Mike: No need to be, I don't see her that way

Me: Then I'm glad

I stretched out my hand and touched his..

Me: We can go upstairs, maybe take a shower together

Mike: Not tonight.. Starting at this instance I'll be working from home for 3 days so I have a lot of work

to catch up on

Me: Does it have to be tonight? Can't you do that tomorrow?

Mike: No I can't.. I have to start tonight

Me: Come o-

Mike: Do I need to repeat myself again?

I retracted my hand..

Me: I'll go upstairs, shower and then say my prayers

Mike: I'll join you in a while

He got up from his chair and came to me, he kissed me on my forehead..

Mike: Good night.. I love you

Me: Good night.. I love you too

NOLITHA

I was losing touch with reality, can you keep normal when you trapped with a snake? I'll be trapped with it for 3 full days..

I know my Husband is not a Saint, I know he has his shortcomings but never did I imagine him to be this ruthless, this cold and heartless..

I heard the door opening, I slowly got up. I was

trembling.. He made his way down to me, my face was still aching from the kick I got earlier on..

He stood before me..

Mike: You look like shit

If only he knew that I was feeling like shit..

Mike: This is just a taste of how cruel I can be

I didn't say anything..

Mike: I could leave you here for 3 days to die slow and then feed your flesh to Python in pieces! I can do a lot of things a lot of terrible things.

Me: I'm sorry that my behavior.. I'm sorry for how I've

behaved, it was wrong and I shouldn't have

Mike: Where is that big sassy mouth now?

Me: I'm sorry.. I just.. It's been very hard for me to accept that my husband was to bring another girl into our home, that's what happens when you love someone you show hurt in the most brutal way

Mike: I understand

He took a few steps towards me..

I stepped back until I was against the wall..

Mike: I can even cut your nipples, your clit. I can hurt you something so bad that you will even beg me to kill you

Me: I'm sorry.. It'll never happen again, I promise

Mike: Don't make a promise that you can't keep

Me: I promise

Mike: Just how sorry are you?

Me: I'm very sorry

Mike: Let's see

He grabbed my hair and brought me down to my knees, I placed both my hands on his thighs..

Mike: Let's see just how sorry you are

He unbuckled his belt..

MELISSA

I decided to go and look for him. My first time coming here, I took a tour around the house. So I know a bit about it..

I went to the study, it was empty.. I checked the bedrooms they were empty too..

Disappointed, I went back to the bedroom..

NOLITHA

He made me to give him a blow job, the most excruciating blow job that I've ever performed. He

had the belt around my neck, choking me with it whilst I had to perform.

If I dared pulled away, tried to vomit. He would tighten the grip of the belt around my neck..

I was struggling to breath, I was getting dizzy it was hell!! I kept strong. Tears streamed down as I stared deep in his eyes. He pulled out and instructed me to open my mouth, I did and he came in my mouth..

Moaning and groaning like he had a bullet in his head..

He dressed up when he was done..

Mike: Swallow



I swallowed and pressed my hand against my mouth hard so I don't vomit..

He extended his hand out to me and helped me up..

Mike: I'm glad we had this talk

He held my hand and we walked out of the basement...

NESTA

Noli's phone vibrated. It was Nka, I picked it up..

Me: Sir

Nka: Nesta.. I'm sorry to bother you so late, I was checking if you've heard anything from Noli

Me: I am not at the house, I'll be going in tomorrow morning. I can't go in now, I'm not allowed in after hours unless I'm really needed

Nka: I understand.. Please let me know first thing in the morning when you go in

Me: I will

NOLITHA

When he went up to the main bedroom, I rushed to the bathroom and brushed my teeth. I looked at myself in the mirror, I was looking like a hot mess. My face was battered, I looked like shit..

I kept on brushing my teeth until my gums started to get painful. I spat out blood mixed with toothpaste..

I was shaking, I was scared and I was in pain. I rinsed my mouth and then turned the tap off. I hit the basin a few times and then sank down to the floor crying..

I had this in the bag, or so I thought..

.

To be continued

24

NOLITHA

The next morning I was woken up by Nesta. Just waking up and realizing it's the morning, another day full of anything that might be detrimental to my mental state, to my soul and my heart. No matter how much I can lie to myself but Nka was right, only honesty will get me through this. Once I'm honest

that my Husband is not the man I thought he is, The man I knew once a long time ago. The easier it will get. Do I wanna be stuck in this toxic marriage? Be miserable everyday of my life or try to break free and see what outside holds for me. I don't know how God feels about this situation, but all I know is that. God is not evil, and God wouldn't force me to be with a man who is this evil..

Nesta: Your face? What happened?

Me: Help me up

My body was aching throughout, she helped me up..

Me: We need a plan Nesta, we need to get out of here

She sat next to me..

Nesta: We?

Me: I'm not leaving you here, quite frankly you are the closest and only thing I have to family right now. Leaving you here to be abused everyday.. It's not fair

Nesta: How are we going to escape?

Me: Escaping is not a problem, how we gonna survive out there without money, jobs is the problem. This country is hell, they should make more shelters for abused women

Nesta: I know

Me: But for now, we keep our cool.. Act normal and don't give out any signs

Nesta: That's true

She took out my phone and gave it to me..

Nesta: Here

Me: Thank you

Nesta: Nka has been calling

Me: Ohw

Nesta: He sounds like a nice guy

Me: Aren't they all?

Nesta: Maybe we should ask him for help

Me: People don't just help people for free in this world Nesta, the world doesn't work that way. If someone helps you, they'll want something from you especially a Man. Nka might help us but at what price? We are running away from a toxic environment and not planning on getting trapped into another one. We need to make this happen, on our own. No Man, No nothing. We done depending on a Man okay?

Nesta: Okay

Me: First thing's first, flush down the medication. I'm not set to depend on medication for the rest of my life

Nesta: Okay I'll go flush them

Me: Thank you

PROPHET NKA

I drove to the organizers of this event. The ones who asked me to pull up as a guest speaker. My announcement on being one of the speakers has helped them sell a lot of tickets..

Lucky: Prophet NK

Me: How are you?

Lucky: I'm good and you Sir?

Me: I'm well

Lucky: You said you wanted to talk to me about



something that's important?

Me: Yes

Lucky: I'm listening

Me: The guest line up has changed I saw the new list yesterday when it was Emailed to me

Lucky: Yes.. Is there something wrong?

Me: Bishop Mike is going to be talking?

Lucky: He couldn't make a decision on time, only got back to us yesterday morning

I nodded..

Lucky: I don't understand.. Is there a problem?

Me: I wanna pull out

Lucky: Why?

Me: I can't share the stage with a Man that I don't believe in. Who he is, What he stands for. I don't believe in him at all

Lucky: Bishop Mike is a very well known and respected Bishop, It's an honour to share the stage with him

Me: I don't want too

Lucky: But you guys won't even sit next to each other,

nor talk at the same time alongside each other

Me: It doesn't matter even if his part of the stage was next door, I just can't

Lucky: We can't take him out, I mean we've been trying to get him for a long time. Now that he's finally said yes.. This is a good opportunity for our church to get more members I'm sure you understand

Me: I understand that I would rather have a church of 5 people than have a large crowd by sharing the same plate with a Man that I don't believe in. I don't believe in his teachings, his hypocrisy, and what he is

Lucky: Those are very strong feelings to have, did something happen between you two? Something that I'm missing?

Me: I will hear from you when you have made your decision, on whether you keeping me or him

NOLITHA

I went down for breakfast, they were sitting around the table. Nesta was serving them. I paused in the middle of the staircase and glanced at them.

Looking all happy, very much in love, feeding her strawberries and what not.. I proceeded and made my way to them..

Mike: Look who decided to come down and join us

He stood up and met me halfway, he held both my hands..

Mike: I'm happy you joining us for breakfast

Me: Me too

He kissed me on my cheek..

We went to the table and he opened the chair for me,  
I sat down..

Me: Thank you

I looked at Melissa..

Me: Before anything, I would like to apologize to you.  
It was wrong how I treated you, I want nothing but  
for us to move forward peacefully

Mel: I'd like that very much

Me: Blessed

Mel: What happened to your face?

Mike: She.. It was an accident a-

Me: It's okay you don't have to protect me. Mel is part of our family and she should know.. I fell down the stairs, I was drunk. Not my proudest moment

Mel: Well that's terrible.. I'm sorry

Me: Don't be.. Ozenziwe akakhalelwa

Mike: Can we all communicate in a language that we all understand?

Me: It's just a vernacular saying

Mike: I'm happy that everything seems to be sorted now

My gums were also still painful..

Me: I'm glad too

PROPHET NKA

Lucky: I can't choose, you already on the cover of our pamphlets and on every other platform of our advertising

Me: He's not

Lucky: Him pulling up as a surprise guest, it's going to be a gift that no one expected

Me: Believe me when I say I understand.. You are an event organizer.. It's yours job and you have to make money, I'm not trying here to take food away from your table. It's who I am, I cannot mix with his kind

Lucky: May I say you are very judgemental for a Man of God, and very sinister. You've let us plan this, agreed.. It's coming soon, people wanna hear you too and then you do this? What gives you the right to judge another Man of God?

Me: I cannot be in union with a man who defies God, a man with hypocritical tendencies what will that make me? Same as him

Lucky: You can't pull out

Me: I don't remember my part of the contract saying I can't



Lucky: Fine we will cancel you and put him, postpone and sell more tickets. I bet we gonna sell more than what you sold us

Me: Problem solved and even though it was my name that was used to market the concert, I don't want a share. I'm sure he comes at a heavy price and you going to need serious money to pay him off

.

To be continued

Apologies Beloved, we will go back to normal posting next week. When I have gotten the times for loadshedding and I'll have a less busy week too

25

NOLITHA

I walked in on Nesta offloading the dishes from the dishwasher..

Me: Hey

Nesta: I'm so proud of you, you played it well

Me: We have to keep on the pace

Nesta: Yes.. Yes Madam

Mike walked in..

Mike: Ladies

Me: I thought you'd be going to the church

Mike: Not today

Me: Okay

Mike: I'm taking Melissa out to get a few clothes

Me: Okay

Mike: I'm going to need you to carry out the duties again of feeding Python

That basement is traumatizing for me, I can't go down there.. Not after what happened last night

Me: Yes of course

Mike: I don't have to remind you how important python is to us

Me: I know

Melissa walked in..

Melissa: I'm ready

Mike: Let's go

He kissed me..

Mike: We'll be right back, I love you

Me: I love you too

PROPHET NKA

I read through, they've posted something on their social media pages..

The statement read:

"As you all know. We are meant to have the sit in soon, unfortunately we have to postpone. Choose another date because Prophet Nka pulled out on us today, short notice. His reasoning was that he cannot share the stage with Bishop Mike Mwangi who happens to be our guest speaker. He further elaborated that he doesn't believe in what Bishop Mwangi stands for, and that he's not a true Man of God. That's all we can

Say for now and we are working tirelessly to find a replacement for him

Thank you

God bless"

Replies were flooding in, especially from those who were defending him. They called me out, said a lot of things about me.

I threw my phone on the table and closed my eyes whilst catching a breath..

NOLITHA

I read what social media was currently saying about Nka. He was the talk of the day, they were having him for the day..

Some defended him, some were neutral. Some bashed him..

I called him..

Nka: I thought I was never going to hear from you again

Me: I know.. I surprise myself sometimes

Nka: How are you?

Me: I'm well and you?

Nka: I'm well too

Me: Just called to check up on you, especially since you are trending

Nka: What are they saying?

Me: Apparently you refused to share a stage with my husband. You don't believe in the Person that he is, you don't stand for what and who he is. You not a hypocrite and you not gonna stand there in support of him

Nka: Your words or theirs?

Me: Did you really refuse?

Nka: Yes I did, I'll refuse tomorrow, next week and any other day



Me: Do you know my Husband?

Nka: Not on a Personal level

Me: Been to our church?

Nka: Never

Me: Heard any of his sermons?

Nka: I wouldn't dare

I chuckled..

Me: You did it for me, didn't you? You don't believe in who he is because of what he's doing to me

Nka: I wouldn't know what he's doing to you, you've never told me

Me: So why did you refuse?

Nka: What exactly are you asking me?

I looked at the time..

Me: I have to go, I have to go get on with my Work

Nka: Of course.. Let me not keep you

Me: Bye

Nka: Bye

## BISHOP MIKE

We were driving to the mall, I had someone tell me that I was trending second on social media. I checked and to my surprise Prophet Nka has denied to share a stage with me..

I don't know him from a Personal level but I've heard of him. I understand why he would, Me and Him.. We not cut from the same cloth..

## NOLITHA

I walked down to the basement to feed python. Just wanted to get it over and done with. I put the two rats in the slot, I closed it and looked at her.. I looked at her for a while and something strange happened..

I felt drawn to her, drawn to the warmth of her eyes..

Very strange, Because reptiles are known to be cold blooded, sent shivers down your spine but I felt something different with Python. Something I cannot explain for now..

.

To be continued

26

PROPHET NKA

My phone has been blowing up, publications wanting my side of the story to make their version of the story more interesting..

It was starting to irritate me, the last one who called. Instead of saying "No comment", I decided to engage..

Journo: Sir I'm calling you with regards to the statement put out against you. We would like to hear your side of the story, hear your version of the truth

Me: Sweet.. Here's my version of the truth. Do you guys have any proof be it of me in recording saying what they accusing me of saying about Bishop Mike

Journo: Are you saying that you never said those things?

Me: I am saying that they exaggerated what I've said, and if you guys are going to help them I will sue for deformation or character

Journo: Are you threatening us?

Me: No.. I am making a Promise

I hung up..

NOLITHA

I opened the cage slowly. I then put my arm in, I was trembling..

She came closer, I retracted my arm a bit..

I took a deep breath and put it back in again. She came again, laid her head on the back of my head. I felt a warm feeling in my chest..

I put my other arm in and ran my hand on her, she felt slippery. Never have I touched a snake before. I kept on touching her as she also drew herself closer to my hands..

I smiled, I don't know what was happening but it felt good. This feeling was something I've never felt before, the instant connection. It was breath taking, beautiful. How does get this comfortable with the most cunning thing on earth? It was great...

BISHOP MIKE

I felt some certain way, and it was not a good feeling. Some heaviness, discomfort..

Me: Honey excuse me, I have to make a call

Mel: Ohw okay

I walked out of the store and called Nolitha, her phone was answered by Nesta..

Nesta: Papa

Me: Where is Noli? Why are you answering her phone?

Nesta: She went down to feed python

Me: Go and check up on her, I want to talk to her

Nesta: Yes Sir

Me: Bloody hell!!

NOLITHA

Me: Wow.. You.. How is this happening?

She was heavy and big, couldn't get her out but half



of her was comfortable resting on my hands..

Nesta: Madam!!

Me: Shoot.. You have to go back in

I put her in or rather the part of her that I was physically connecting with. I gently placed her in and then closed the cage and locked it.

Nesta came in...

Nesta: Are you okay?

Me: Uhm Yes

Nesta: You've been here for a while

Me: I know.. I.. It was hard coming down here

Nesta: He shouldn't be doing this

My phone rang in her hand..

Nesta: Here.. He wants to talk to you

I took it and answered..

Me: Papa

Mike: How long does it take to feed python? It's an hour pass her feeding time

Me: I'm sorry.. It was hard for me to come down here,

took a lot in me but I did manage to feed her.. She's fine

Mike: That's good news, I'm glad things seem to be going well and in order

Me: Yes.. I hope the shopping is going good too

Mike: Yes it's okay.. Guess I'll see you later at home

Me: Very well

Mike: I love you

Me: I love you too

PROPHET NKA

I was woken up by a dream. A dream of a python snake in a cage. A soul is trapped inside the python..

I get Prophet dreams for a reason..

If the snake dies, the soul will be free..

As time goes on, the dream will be more clearer as time goes on. That's how it goes, they make more sense as the time goes on. They get more clear..

Who does that? Trap a soul inside a snake? It's crazy..

NOLITHA

Nesta: Here I've made you something to eat

Me: Thank you.. Join me

Nesta: If he comes in and finds me at the table, he's going to throw a fit

Me: They not here for now

She sat opposite me..

Me: I was thinking

Nesta: Yes?

Me: We going to steal his money, go far and start afresh

Nesta: Huh?

Me: He's worth 5 million for now, if we steal 1.5M it'll be enough to get a head start

Nesta: He's going to kill us twice! First for escaping, then after.. He's going to kill us for stealing his money

Me: Don't be scared

Nesta: I want to escape but not with my head on the chopping block

I hit the table..

Me: Nesta!! Focus!! We don't have anything, we don't have anyone. Mike has money all we need to do is

get to his money. Steal a few and then it's Carpe diem, we live for the now and worry about consequences later

Nesta: Okay fine

Me: Thank you

Nesta: What about Nka?

Me: What about him?

Nesta: I think he likes you

Me: He'll be over it!

MELISSA

The clothes amounted to R7 000 in total, Mike was sitting on the chair where you sit when you fit shoes. He was sweating and feel hot. He was blowing air on his face with his hat..

Me: I'm done, we can go pay

Mike: It's about damn time!

He got up and we walked to the counter to pay..

Me: Thank you for the shopping

Mike: You don't have to always thank me Melissa, some other things are necessary

I kept quiet, he has been in a mood..



## PROPHET NKA

Clover had pulled over to spend a night at my house. He does that from time to time when he gets lonely, come over for a home cooked meal especially with my Mother who is a very good cook..

It gives us more time to catch up..

Clover: Shit.. Honestly I didn't think that at your age you would fall for someone. You are in your early 30s, people in your age group are already settled with kids or have fully given up on relationships and marriage

Me: I knew there was someone for me, I just didn't know when she was going to come and I also didn't

think she would have so much drama

Clover: The good ones always have drama

Me: I'm thinking of asking her out

He picked up his glass of whiskey..

Clover: I'm drinking alcohol, you drinking soda but it seems like you the one getting drunk

Me: There more she stays with him, the more she gets broken. The more she will give up on love. The more she will hate Men

Clover: She's married and not just to anyone but to the most ruthless Man I know. He can fuck up your life, don't act on your erection. Act on your logic

Me: On my what? (Chuckling)

Clover: On your erection

Me: I'm not acting on my erection

Clover: I just don't want to see you fucking yourself up, Mike is dangerous. Don't just do things, be calculative

I looked at the time..

Me: I have to retire to bed, I'll see you tomorrow morning

Clover: Goodnight

Me: Goodnight my nigga

NOLITHA

I tried to sleep but I was hearing this calm soothing voice calling my name..

"Nolitha.."

I got up from the bed and looked around, it was dark and there was no one in my bedroom..

"Nolitha.."

Me: Who is it? Who is calling me?

"Nolitha.."

I took my duvet and covered myself with it, then I walked out following the sound of the voice. It led me straight down to the basement..

I punched in the code, Mike had given it to me. The new code. The door opened and I made my way in.. I walked closer to Python's cage. I looked at her..

I put the duvet on the floor, then I opened the cage. I got her out, she helped by rolling herself around me. I sat down on the duvet, I put her down. She coiled herself up next to me, I looked at her and then closed my eyes..

PROPHET NKA

"I found myself in a hotel room. I looked around, and I heard moaning sounds. A woman moaning, and a man moaning too. He sounded like he was enjoying

himself.

I turned and looked at the bed, I saw them. Nolitha and the gentleman. They were in bed she was ontop of him, fucking him and he was enjoying himself. I moved closer..

Me: Nolitha?

She stopped..

Me: What are you doing?

She slowly turned her head and looked at me, I saw it.. The succubus..

Noli: Now I'm killing him!

He started screaming..

Me: Nolitha No...

She closed her eyes and tears streamed down her cheeks, I wanted to get to her but I couldn't..

Me: Nolitha!!

She got off him and he fell off the bed. He was bleeding from his crotch, serious bleeding"

I opened my eyes, and looked at the ceiling. I caught my breath..

Me: How?? How??

BISHOP MIKE

I tried to concentrate but I was failing. I closed the file and made my way out of the Study..

I passed by Nolitha's bedroom. The door was wide open.. I walked in, she wasn't in her bedroom. I walked out and made my way to the bathroom and every room in the house.

I couldn't find her. I went back to her bedroom, I opened the wardrobe. All her clothes were there, I sighed in relief. I stood there and thought for a while she could still have escaped without any clothes..

I looked around, her phone was on the pillow. I took it and checked, there was no evidence of her cheating, talking to someone or even planning an escape..

Me: Dammit Nolitha!!



## PROPHET NKA

I sat on the couch and drew her exactly how I saw her in the dream..

I took the glass and drank my water, I continued drawing her on the pad..

I sat there for a while and took off my glasses, I chewed on the back of the pencil.

Mike doesn't have that power to conjure a succubus, it's an upper level demon..

You have to have strong dark powers to conjure such demons. Usually and most of the time, they possess without being conjured but they don't just possess. This wasn't making any sense..

Me: Who would conjure such a demon

NESTA

Someone was banging on the door..

Me: Who is it?

Mike: It's me.. Open up!

My heart stopped, what does he want?

Mike: Open up this bloody door or I'll break it down!!

I put on my gown and went to open. I unlocked with my hands trembling and opened. I stepped back as

he made his way in..

Mike: Where is she?

Me: Who?

He slapped me..

Mike: Where is she?

Me: I don't know what you talking about

Mike: If I search this cottage and find her, I'm fucking up both of you

He walked around searching. Turning the tables up and down..

I was shaking, I was trembling..

Mike: Where is Nolitha?

Me: I.. I don't know.. Since I left her in the house before knocking off

Mike: If you lying to me

Me: I swear to God I'm not

He looked at me and then walked out, I ran to lock the door.. The way I was so scared, I had even pissed on myself. I sat down on the floor crying..

PROPHET NKA

Clover yawned..

Me: And?

Clover: It's fucken 2am in the morning and you woke me up to ask me about a succubus?

Me: This is important Clover

Clover: I don't see how Mike can conjure a succubus

Me: Can an upper demon possess without permission from the host?

Clover: No but it can manipulate. Open a gate to possess her.. Sexual dreams anything sexual that can put her at risk

Me: How can we help Nolitha not to get possessed?

Clover: Prayer, protection and faith

Me: That's all?

Clover: Yes

Me: Then that's good.. That's very good

BISHOP MIKE

I got back into the house..

Me: Nolitha fuck!!

I thought for a second..

Me: The basement

I went there, I punched in the code..

"Access denied"

Me: What??

I tried again..

"Access denied"

I hit the door..

Me: Fuck!!!

## NOLITHA

The next morning I woke up in the basement. I was sleeping on my duvet in basement.

I looked around, Python was inside her cage. The cage was open. I got up very confused and locked it, Did Mike put me in here? How? Dragged me down here without me realizing it? Without me feeling anything? Did he also drug me to sleep so I don't feel anything?

Something was off about this, how did I end up down here?. My throat was sore, my body was aching. Felt like I was coming down with a cold..

I took my duvet and walked to the door, I punched in



the code and walked out..

I bumped into Nesta walking around in circles in the living room..

Nesta: Where have you been?

Me: Basement

Nesta: Base? Papa thinks you escaped! (Whispering)

I looked around..

Me: Why are you whispering?

Nesta: The walls have ears

Me: The walls h-.. What? Look you not making any sense

Nesta: He thinks you've escaped and he is mad

Melissa walked down the stairs, she came to us..

Melissa: What is going on?

Me: I.. I was sleep walking last night

Mel: Huh?

Me: It happens

Mel: I didn't know you sleep walk

Me: Me either

She shook her head..

Mel: Whatever.. Nesta where is breakfast?

Nesta: Oh Breakfast

She walked away..

Mel: Useless I tell you! How did you keep up with her?

I bit my tounge to prevent punching a bitch in her face..

Me: Where is Mike?

Mel: Sleeping

Me: I should go sleep too

I walked upstairs...

PROPHET NKA

Clover walked in..

Clover: Come on, not the succubus again!

I closed the book..

Me: Good morning

Clover: You'll go crazy

I took my phone..

Me: Excuse Me

I went to the kitchen and called Nolitha..

We have a time schedule..

Noli: Good morning

Me: She's still alive

Noli: Praise the Lord!

Me: How are you?

Noli: I'm good and you?

Me: I'm good.. How is your schedule looking this afternoon?

Noli: Why?

Me: I want to take you out

She kept quiet...

Me: Still breathing?

Noli: Yaa.. It's not going to happen

Me: Why? Because you are in a marriage with a Man that you no longer in love with anymore? You scared of what people will say? What happened to

friendship? Going out with someone doesn't mean you dating that Person

Noli: No because I'm still married! I'm still a married woman!

Me: Come on Noli

Noli: You already trending for a notorious behavior, you wanna trend more?

Me: Social media didn't make me

Noli: Fine let's go out.. Go to a restaurant, screw what people will say

Me: Perfect, 14:00

Noli: I was joking!

Me: 14:00 then, I'll text you the name of the restaurant when I have made a reservation

Noli: Nk-

Me: Bye

He hung up...

NOLITHA

Me: Fuck!!

I put my phone away..



Me: Fuck!!

I laid back on my pillow when I heard the door opening..

I rose my head up, it was Mike. He leaned by the door and looked at me..

Mike: Where were you?

Me: Huh?

He walked to my bed, I moved to closer to the headboard..

Mike: I'm going to ask you one last time.. Where were you? I came to your bedroom and you weren't here at night

Me: I woke in the basement

Mike: Nolitha don't fuck with me!

Me: You can ask Nesta!

He grabbed my leg and pulled me to the middle of the bed..

Me: Where would I go wearing PJs? Why would I leave and come back?

He opened up my legs and pulled my underwear down. He stuck two fingers in me, I closed my eyes.. He pulled them out and smelled them, I looked at him scared..

Mike: How did you wind up in the basement?

Me: I was sleep walking

Mike: What?

Me: I don't remember anything I swear

Mike: How do you sleep walk to the basement? Why not any other room?

Me: I don't know

Mike: I swear Mel

Me: Why would I escape at night then come back?

He wiped his face with his hands..

Mike: What are you up too?

Me: Nothing.. I swear

Mike: Nolitha if I find out that you up to something or even trying to kill Python, I will kill you!

Me: I wouldn't do that, I'm devoted to you

Mike: We'll see about that

He clicked his tongue and walked out..

I let out a sigh..

MELISSA

I was not happy with how things were going in my marriage. I thought my husband and I, we would be on our honeymoon phase. Making love, romantic dinners but that is not happening. He is too strung up on Nolitha and she seems to have him by his balls..

She's doing anything and everything to divert his attention away from me. She's becoming an annoying Bee..

Nesta: Can I get you anything else Madam?

Me: No

Nesta: I'll be in the kitchen

Me: Nesta?

Nesta: Madam?

Me: Do you know how important it is to pick the right side?

Nesta: I don't think I'm following

Me: In this game, it's important to choose a side..  
Side with the one who has too much benefits

Nesta: I am still confused

Me: You can go

She bowed a little..

Nesta: Yes Madam

NOLITHA

He sent the message..

I am not a total prisoner, I'm allowed to go anywhere but I need to tell about my whereabouts..

I looked at his pictures one last time.

What harm can it do? I need the fresh air anyway..

I texted him back..

"We'll go out, but I pick up the place"

To be continued

## NOLITHA

Nesta was the only one in the house, told me Melissa went to school and Mike went out. I had texted Mike that I'll be driving out to the mall to get a few Personal things. He responded with an "Okay", than something that would initiate an argument..

I might have been impulsive on my agreeing to meet up with Mike, more especially since my face was still bruised. I had to put in a lot of makeup and glasses to hide what was underneath..

I was nervous, I don't even know why. Nka and I aren't dating nor seem to be interested in each other with that, but this meeting made me very nervous..



I drove out to the park I told him about, I was even the first one to arrive. How rude? You initiate a meet up and arrive late??

I sat on the bench and glanced at the dam. I tried to keep cool, so that no one notices me

I waited for at least 15min, when I was about to leave. He passed a single white rose over my shoulder..

I did not turn back..

Nka: Peace offering?

I took the rose without turning back..

Nka: I'm sorry that I'm late

He came over and sat next to me, more handsome in Person. He looked at me with his arms on his thighs and rubbing his hands together. His head just slightly turned..

Me: It's rude

Nka: Same way it's rude that you'll be conversing me in glasses and a hat

Me: It's part of my style today. We were coming to a park

He laughed and shook his head..

Nka: He has hit you right?

I put my hand on my chest..

Nka: A woman who is eager to meet up with a guy that she likes will never show up with a hat, glasses, and a face full of makeup. The makeup is too much I can wipe it off with my hand

Me: Is that why you asked me out?

Nka: May I?

He extended his hand and took off my hat, then my glasses. He fixed my wig, I looked down..

Nka: There we go

He placed his hand under his chin and made me to look at him..

Nka: When did this happen?

Me: It doesn't matter

He removed his hand from my chin....

Nka: Okay

(Silence)

Me: Look I know you think I'm stupid for reporting him, I'm a fool and his never going to change, he's going to do it again until he kills me

He shrugged his shoulders..

Nka: I didn't say anything

Me: You were thinking it, I know internally you have a lot to say

Nka: I don't walk around with the intentions of motivating people, sometimes I just wanna sit in a park. Glance at the dam and talk

That was embarrassing..

Me: Then I'm glad

Nka: Did you bring the food?

Me: Excuse Me?

Nka: Drinks?

Me: You asked me out, weren't you supposed to bring that?

He looked at his hands. He had this beautiful side smile.. Very charming and you can lose yourself in his eyes. He was smelling good too.. His uniquely designed shirt, fit him perfectly..

Nka: I did ask to take you out to a restaurant you opted for this, people with plan B actually bring food

Me: Wow

Nka: I'm just pulling your leg I have something in the car.. Come

Me: It's that heavy?

He got up and winked at Me..

Nka: Very

He offered me his hand and helped me up, we walked to his car..

BISHOP MIKE

I looked at the time. Nolitha usually shops for 2 hours max.. I called the driver..

Driver: Sir?

Me: Are you guys still at the mall?

Driver: I'm sorry Sir?

Me: My wife texted me that she's going to the mall

Driver: Miss Melissa or Miss Nolitha?

I sighed..

Me: Nolitha.. Aren't you with her?

Driver: No she drove out on his own

I took off my reading glasses..

Me: Really?

Driver: Yes Sir? Is everything okay?



Me: Let's see

I hung up. I took my cell phone and checked her whereabouts..

Me: "Green Leaves Park", What are you hiding

I called the Driver again..

Me: Can you please come down here and take me to Green leaves park

Driver: Yes Sir

NOLITHA

We got the basket and the towel then found a good spot..

I took out things from the basket.. It was treats and cranberry juice..

Nka: Would've brought wine or champagne but with how you've been downing alcohol lately didn't think it was a good idea to make you drink especially since you driving too

Me: Cranberry juice is fine

He flashed that smile again..

Nka: You pretty even with the bruises

Me: Don't try to score points

Nka: I'm not.. I know your pictures without the bruises remember?

I smiled..

Me: Strawberries.. If I didn't know better I'd say you are trying to romance me off my pants straight to the towel

Nka: A Bishop's wife with a dirty mind am I safe?

Me: I haven't even started

It was so breath taking how we so comfortable with each other..

BISHOP MIKE

The Driver came and drove me down to the park..

My heart was beating very fast, scared of what might be awaiting me there..

I unbuttoned my shirt from the collar against my neck so I can be able to breath..

I was sweating, there's no greater Pain that can choke a Man than his wife cheating. It's a shame, it's degrading and it hurts too...

NOLITHA

Nka: So.. How does a well spoken young lady like you, end up in a relationship with an old man?

Me: It's a long story

Nka: Tell it

Me: Well..

Nka: Hold that thought

Me: Why?

Nka: The sun is blazing, it's blinding me.. How about we move over to sit by my car

Me: We have to move the whole setting there?

Nka: If you don't mind?

Me: It's okay

We started moving everything and went to sit against my car..

BISHOP MIKE

We drove in and I looked around.. It's not a very big Park, so we were able to get through.

I kept on checking and checking but saw nothing, I only saw her car..

Me: Pull over

He pulled over, I got out and made my way to her car on foot..

To be continued

30

MIKE MWANGI

I looked around her car, I furthered my eyes to other cars and I didn't see her or any sight of her..

Me: Where the hell are you?

I saw a car that was a bit closer to where hers was, compared to other cars..

I walked up to it..

When I was getting closer my phone rang..

I took it out, it was Sister Theresa..

Me: Theresa

Theresa: Papa I'm sorry to disturb you

Me: What is it?

Theresa: One of the girls is sick

Me: What's wrong?

Theresa: I'm not sure but we've called the  
Ambulance

Me: It's okay.. I'm coming

I turned back and walked to my car..



Me: Take me to the Girl's compound

Driver: Yes Sir

NOLITHA

Me: Must be hard

Nka: No it's not

Me: I mean giving up what you know, giving up what you've worked hard for to answer to your calling. It must be hard

Nka: You can't run away from who you are, that's the sad thing.. No matter where you run too, no matter how much you run, a Spiritual gift will always be with

you because it's who you are

Me: But you seem to be handling it very well

Nka: Yaa I'm trying

Me: You know this is nice, I've had my own doubts about this meet up but it's nice

Nka: Thank you for coming

Me: I enjoyed it but unfortunately I have to go

Nka: At least you showed up, that's the important thing

Me: Yeah.. I showed up

MELISSA

My friend and I Phelo were eating lunch..

Phelo: So how is marriage life treating you?

Me: It's.. It's different from what I expected

Phelo: How so? Is it because you've into polygamy?

Me: Maybe but all I know is that it's different from what I expected it to be

Phelo: Different nice? Or different horrible?

Me: Just different, I'm still finding ways to

understand how

Phelo: I see.. Well just enjoy and live for the moment there's no harm in doing so try to enjoy your marriage so long sister wife is not giving you any sleepness nights

Me: Ya that's true.. I'm trying to enjoy

NOLITHA

He walked me to my car..

Nka: I'm hoping we can do this again? Sometime?

He fixed my hat..

Me: Me too

Nka: Have a safe trip back home

Me: Thank you

I walked closer and hugged him..

Me: Thank you for today, Our meeting wasn't that long but it sure did make a difference. Even an hour or two spent with a different energy can make sense

Nka: I know.. Keep well and take care of yourself

Me: I will

Nka: Things will change, I promise you.

Me: I know

BISHOP MWANGI

The ambulance came and she was taken away, she had an asthma attack.. She was going to be fine..

Me: I'll be in my office

Theresa: Yes Sir

I went to my office, I then called Nolitha. She picked up on the second ring..

Nolitha: Papa

Me: Si Amor

Nolitha: I'm driving back home now

Me: How was your shopping?

Nolitha: Peaceful and fun, I enjoyed the fresh air

Me: Blessed.. What did you buy?

Nolitha: Just a dress and heels and a few other things

Me: Okay can't wait to see them

Nolitha: Me too

Me: I'll see you later at home

Nolitha: Okay

Me: I love you

Nolitha: I love you too

PROPHET NKA

I was driving back home. Couldn't get my mind off the succubus, I've seen it again.

Nolitha has been through a lot, she doesn't deserve more pain and more trauma and it all circles around one Person. Her husband.

I still don't know how she's going to get away from him..



NOLITHA

I passed by at the mall to get a few clothes to stand as my decoy, when I was done I went back home..

Nesta: You seem to be in a good mood

Me: I had a beautiful day

Nesta: I can see that, what happened?

Me: Nothing.. Look we are going ahead with our plan, we going forward

Nesta: Any new developments?

Me: Just need his password and pin, get into his account transfer money to mine then we good as rain

Nesta: Sounds dangerous, how are you to pull it off?

Me: I'll see, Yes it's dangerous but we are leaving here

BISHOP MIKE

Since that scandal, I ended up following this Prophet Nka to see the kind of Person that he is....

On his Instagram he uploaded a picture of the damn in the park and the caption was:

"I had a great time"

This cannot be, My wife cannot be seeing this guy..

.

To be continued

NOLITHA

Later on, I decided to "Bond" with Melissa.

It is said that "Keep your friends close, and your enemies closer". So I need to keep her closer. I've learned to never undermine anyone, Melissa might potentially turn dangerous..

Mike walked in, surprised to see us bonding.

Mike: Good evening

We greeted him back..

Mike: Never thought I'd see this

Me: Decided to teach Melissa your favorite dish, give Nesta a break

Mike: That's good

Mel: We almost done

Mike: I am blessed beyond measures. I mean I have two beautiful respectful wives, many women are out there cheating and mine are at home cooking together

Mel: We will never cheat

Mike: Noli

I faked a smile..

Me: You know my heart

Mike: I'm glad because there's no one who is going to leave this marriage, only in a coffin. I didn't make an oath with God to be played, and I'm not willing to start over with anyone else. I'm already settled, I hope the feeling is mutual

Mel: I am not willing to settle with anyone else too

Me: Me too

Mike: I'm glad we all feel the same, let me go freshen up before dinner

He walked away..

Mel: That was awkward

Me: Very

PROPHET NKA

I walked into Ella's bedroom..

Me: How is the patient doing?

Ella: Maybe the sickness is demonic

Me: Demonic, that's heavy

Ella: I'm not getting better

Me: Because colds are harder to go away and if you

don't take your meds frequently then you won't get better

I sat down..

Me: Listen.. We are human beings, we are not God. We are bound to get sick every now and then and that doesn't mean the sickness is demonic. There's factors affecting our bodies and immune system, and sometimes our immune system needs a little bit of help to fight. That's why God made Doctors to help us fight off the sicknesses, whilst God help us fight negative energies that might wanna surround us as we sick. That's why you drink medication and Grandma Helps you do a cleansing bath so you can keep the energies around you clean

Ella: I understand

Me: You will get better, I promise



Ella: I know

Me: Hot chocolate and marshmallows?

Ella: I'd like that very much

Me: I'm coming

NOLITHA

We all gathered at the table to eat dinner..

Mike: This is delicious

Me: We really tried

Mel: Thank you Nolitha for teaching me

Me: You welcome

Mike: Since you two are now besties, I think you should both do shopping together from hereon

Me: Our schedules clash, you'll find I wanna go shopping today and Mel has school. When she wants to go I can't

Mel: That's true

Mike: You two will have to find a schedule that works for you, I want you to be your own best friends. Melissa is young she might get young friends that will mislead her, women are toxic

Me: It's fine.. We will find a way to make it work

I looked at Mike and cleared my throat..

Me: I was thinking

Mike: About?

Me: Instead of lazing around I can go help at the Girl's compound every day

Mike: You never had an interest there

Me: It's something I've been thinking about lately, I can have sermons with the girls

Mike: I don't know Nolitha

Me: Why not? What's wrong?

Mel: The Sisters are already helping with the girls

Me: It's not that deep I can help around unless there's a reason why I am not supposed to

Mike: The basement?

Me: Nesta will help, plus it's time Melissa knows about the basement because she'll also be required to help

Mel: What's in the basement?

Mike: Nothing.. Fine you can go but from 8am- 15:00 latest and not everyday

Me: Thank you

PROPHET NKA

I kept busy with my phone as Ella watched her favorite show..

I wasn't interested in it but it's good bonding time..

My Mom walked in..

Ma: Nonkanyezi is coming over with her husband to spend the weekend with us, Saturday we will have a family dinner

All my Mother's kids. We were named:

Nonkayiso, Nkanyiso, Nonkanyezi

In chronological order as our birth..

Me: That's good, can I invite a friend over?

Ma: Clover doesn't need an invite, he's basically a child of this house now

Me: Not Clover, Nolitha

Ma: Nolitha?

Ella: A girlfriend?

Me: Yes she's a girl and my friend

Ma: I.. I didn't expect that especially since she's..

She looked at Ella..

Ma: She's in a union, I seriously don't know how to feel about that

Me: I would really like her to come over

Ma: Ohw well then you can invite her

Ella: Can Invite a friend too?

Ma: Of course you can

My Mother looked at me..

Ma: This sure will be interesting

NOLITHA

My phone vibrated as we were halfway through dessert..

I checked, it was a whatsapp message from Nka..

"Lunch at my house this Saturday?"

I didn't save his number for safety reasons..

I replied:

"We'll see"



Mike: Who is that?

Me: Someone liked my picture on Instagram, it's a notification

Mike: Put it on silence, It's rude attending your phone at the dinner table

Me: I'm sorry

.

32

NOLITHA

The only reason why I opted to help at the compound, was to find ways to see Nka every now and then. I enjoyed my time with him yesterday, he makes me feel alive, feel well and make me forget

about the depression that I'm going through at home.

The following morning, I woke up and prepared myself. Then drove out to the Compound. The Sisters were welcoming, very respectful but heavily intimidated..

The girls were at school so they ran me through their everyday schedules..

Groceries is done every week, now that seems like a gateway I could do.. Seeing Nka every week. Doing groceries for 20-30 girls will take time, and I need to bound one of the sisters to secrecy because I definitely won't be doing it alone but it's worth a shot...

BISHOP MIKE

I was talking to Evans, telling him about Nolitha possibly cheating..

Evans: There is a possibility that she might be having an affair, and if she's having an affair with that Prophet you are in trouble. Nolitha will find out the truth, about her Mother, her death and python. Nolitha can be your big downfall

Me: I know.. The question is, what do we do now?

Evans: Well have you confronted her?

Me: No.. Not yet

Evans: Don't

Me: My wife is having an affair, how do I not approach?

Evans: You cannot win a fight especially if you fighting from anger, you'll be impulsive and everything will be fucked trust me

Me: So what do we do?

Evans: You act like you don't know, what good and big scandal than a Bishop's wife having an affair with a Prophet. That would be hypocritical of the Prophet, especially for someone of his standards who does Motivational speaking

Me: I didn't think of that

Evans: We will destroy them

Me: Looking forward to it

NOLITHA

I was on the phone with Nka..

Nka: Just at my office getting some work done, I've been invited to preach at some church later on

Me: That's good

Nka: So what do you say about my offer?

Me: I don't know.. Dinner at your house? With your family? That sounds extreme. How are they gonna look at me? What will they think of me? They going to think that I am a hoe

Nka: I don't know the people you've been associating with but my family is not like that

Me: I don't know

Nka: Let's try it, if you don't like it then you don't have to anymore. It'll be a once off thing

Me: Okay.. We'll see

MELISSA

I checked.. Negative

I sighed..

What the hell? How am I not pregnant?

Having a baby would earn me more points, I don't feel like I'll ever be respected like Nolitha. I have to make my mark, Mike loves that woman. I thought by agreeing to marry him, I'll have him but that was not the case.

I got up and flushed. I threw it away, went to wash my hands. Took my bag and went to my next class..

BISHOP MIKE

Me: I want to break Nolitha to the nearest mental institution

Evans: You'd do anything?

Me: Anything

Evans: That's good because I have an idea

Me: I'm listening

Evans: We are going to conjure the Succubus

Me: I thought t-

Evans: We can't do it? Of course we can't but I know who can

Me: Who?

Evans: Don't worry about that



Me: Conjuring a succubus to possess her, she'll be a sexual slave.. A host, dirty spiritually

Evans: Perfect

Me: Let's do it

Evans: Let's do it

NOLITHA

I was just doing rounds, when I passed this other bedroom. I heard someone sobbing.

I knocked.. The Person kept quiet..

Me: Hello? May I come in?

It was quiet. I opened the door slowly and made my way in..

Some girl was sitting on the bed..

Me: Hi

Her: Hi

Me: What's your name?

Her: Sweetness

Me: Hi Sweetness, why aren't you at school?

Her: I'm not feeling well

I walked up to her. I sat on the bed and tried to touch her. She moved back scared..

Me: What's wrong sweetheart?

She shook her head..

Me: You can talk to me

Her: I can't

Me: Why not?

Her: He'll kill me

Me: No one is going to kill you, you are safe here

Her: I wanna go home, I don't like it here

Me: Why not? What's wrong?

Her: I want to go home

Me: Hey.. Is there someone who is abusing you here?

She kept quiet..

Me: Sweets.. I promise you that nothing will happen to you

Her: Promise?

Me: I promise

Her: Bishop Mike he.. He sleeps with us

My eyes widened..

Her: I don't wanna do it anymore.. I wanna go home

Me: It's okay.. Come here.. Come here I'm not going to hurt you

She moved closer, I hugged her..

Me: It's okay.. It's going to be okay

I cannot believe this!

.

To be continued

## NOLITHA

I was sickened to my deepest pits. This chikd wouldn't lie about this, She was frightened. She was trembling when I held her. The Man I so loved for all these years is here sexual violating little innocent girls. Using the compound as a decoy to lure little girls here. Melissa was here, Was Melissa also violated??

I drove home straight away, defeated..

I told Nesta, She was defeated too..

Nesta: I can't believe this

Me: He is a sexual Predator, A pedophile, A monster,  
A bastard! A sick sick bastard

Nesta: Sunday he stands at the pulpit and preach  
with those girls sitting there knowing very well what  
he's done

Me: I can't.. Nesta I can't.. I want a divorce

Nesta: Okay let's not make rush decisions

Me: Rush decisions? Nesta have you heard a word I  
said?

Nesta: Madam

Me: I'm calling the Lawyer

I took my cellphone and called the Lawyer...

BISHOP MIKE

When I was done with work, I packed up my things and recieved a call from my Lawyer.

Me: Mr Disher

Disher: Bishop

Me: Is everything okay?

Disher: Actually No

Me: What is it?



Disher: Your wife just called Me, She's filing for divorce

Me: What?

Disher: I wanted to give you a heads up, you'll be served

Me: Did she state her reason?

Disher: Not at all

Me: Thank you for the heads up

Disher: Okay.. Bye

Me: Bye

NOLITHA

Nesta: I don't think we should do this

Me: Nesta you should be packing your things

Nesta: Where are we gonna go?

Me: I don't know.. I don't care! Go pack!

Nesta: Okay

She walked out..

My phone rang. It was Nka, I had called him but he didn't pick up..

Me: Hello

Nka: Saw your missed call

Me: I'm leaving my Husband

Nka: Pardon?

Me: I'm filing for divorce, I'm packing my things.. I'm leaving

Nka: What happened?

Me: I found out that he sexual violates little girls at the Girls compound

He exhaled..

Me: I can take everything but that.. That is sick!

Nka: I understand but your Husband is ruthless are you sure that you are ready to face the great battle ahead?

Me: I would rather lose my life than be with a man who does such and I remain quiet about it

Nka: I understand.. So where are you going to go?

Me: I don't know but I have some money, maybe a flat then I'll figure something out from there

Nka: Won't he freeze your account?

Me: It's in my name, he can't do that

Nka: Call me when you out

Me: I will

Nka: Bye

Me: Bye

I hung up..

PROPHET NKA

I went to the back, My Mother was hanging her laundry....

Me: Ma

She looked at me..

Me: Can I talk to you?

Ma: Okay

Me: My friend.. Nolitha, She's leaving her husband

Ma: I'm not sure if I should say that's good or bad

Me: It's good just done under an impulsive reaction

Ma: Alright.. That's what you wanted to talk about?

Me: We don't use the back room

Ma: You want us to come live here?

Me: Not entirely she's going to rent a flat, I was thinking if things don't go well for her in the flat instead of going back she can come live here

Ma: Why do I have a feeling that this will end bad?

Me: Her Husband is ruthless, I'd never forgive myself if I didn't try to help a woman that needed help

Ma: You helping this woman because you love her, that's the real truth

Me: Something like that

Ma: Well you definitely feel strongly about this,

there's nothing I can say that will change your mind

Me: I don't think so

Ma: We'll see then

Me: Thank you

NOLITHA

We loaded our bags in my car..

Melissa pulled in the driveway..

Nesta: We actually are doing this

Me: Yes



Melissa walked up to us..

Melissa: What is going on?

Me: We are leaving

Mel: Why?

I looked at her..

Me: The compound it's not about virgin girls wanting to preserve their virginity right?

Mel: I'm sorry?

Me: Were you violated sexually by my husband

before he decided to marry you?

Her face went pale..

Mel: I don't know what you talking about

Me: Well then he has a python in the basement.  
Code 24429, It's fed rats. Round about now it needs  
feeding, if it's not well taken care of the riches will  
vanish.. Get on with it

I closed the boot..

Me: Let's go Nesta

.

To be continued

## PROPHET NKA

I kept on pacing up and down waiting for her to call. 2 hours had already passed, I was gravely worried. A part of Me wanted to hit the road in search of her, Another part of me didn't wanna overwhelm her.. My phone rang, all those unsettling feelings went. It was a number I didn't recognize though..

Me: Hello?

Voice: Good day, Is this Prophet Nka.. Nkan-

Me: Nkanyiso Mhlaba?

Voice: Yes

Me: Who is this?

Voice: I am Sharona, The executive producer of the show "Men of God" loosely called "MOG". On Sabc 1?

Me: Ohw yes it just started right?

Voice: Yes

Me: May I help you with something?

Sharona: I have watched your videos and I am taken,  
We would like to bring you over as one of our key  
speakers

Me: Are you serious?

Sharona: You are what the show is, we can start you with a 12 months contract

Me: Wow.. I.. I don't know what to say

Sharona: May you please come to our studio tomorrow morning? To discuss everything?

Me: Yes.. Of course I.. I'll be there

Sharona: Thank you.. See you tomorrow then, 10:00am?

Me: I'll be there

Sharona: Thank you Prophet

I hung up..

Me: Wow

MELISSA

I punched in the code..

"Access granted"

The door opened, a scream actually escaped my lips. I was praying that Nolitha is wrong, that this is just her being crazy as always..

I slowly made my way in, it was chilly. That kind of coldness that makes your skin crawl and give you goosebumps. I walked down the stairs, you'd expect the light bulb to brighten the room but it didn't. Window painted black, no sunlight coming in..

I stood on the ground and looked around, then I saw it. The cage, with the biggest python snake that I've ever seen..

Me: Ohh my God!! Ohh my God!!

I ran for the stairs, as I climbed up. My dress tripped me and I fell...

NOLITHA

I parked the car, Nesta and I remained inside for a couple of minutes. In total silence..

Nesta: We did it, We escaped

This felt unusual, it felt strange. An adrenaline rush..

Nesta: We.. We made it

We were gonna spend a couple of days at some BnB,  
until we find a home..

Me: Come on let's go in, Let's book a room.

Nesta: Okay

Me: Fake names remember

Nesta: Yes Madam

BISHOP MIKE

I walked up straight to the bedroom when I got home,



The guest room I mean. Her car was not outside.. I looked around, some of her clothes were missing.. On the mirror it was written "This is your last kiss xoxo" with a red lipstick..

Me: Fuck!!!

I called her, she didn't pick up..

NOLITHA

Receptionist: R450 for two nights breakfast included

Me: Both of us?

Receptionist: R650

Me: We'll take it, can we stay here for maybe a week?

7 days?

Receptionist: R4 550, but we'll give you a discount of R550

Me: We'll take it

Receptionist: Fill in the register, room 10.

Me: Okay

Receptionist: Cash or you will be using a card?

Me: Cash

Receptionist: Noted

BISHOP MIKE

I was so angry that I was literally shaking. I tried tracking her but it bounced off and showed that her car was here in the premises. She must've somehow found the tracking device, took it out and left it..

I unbuttoned my shirt and sat down, I was sweating and breathing abnormally. Nolitha is going to kill me with a heart attack one of these days..

NOLITHA

Nesta was nervous, she was gonna give us out. Make these people ask questions, suspect something..

Me: At least the bedroom is not bad

The whole BnB wasn't bad, just one big house..

I turned and looked at Nesta..

Me: Will you stop being so nervous? You gonna get us caught!

Nesta: I'm sorry I just.. I still can't believe it

I went and put my hands on her shoulders..

Me: We ran away, we made it out. Relax a minute and enjoy the moment okay?

Nesta: Okay

Me: Good.. Let's settle in

BISHOP MIKE

I forced myself to go to Nesta's cottage, she was also missing..

Her clothes were missing too.. They left together..

I don't understand, what made Nolitha to just up and left??

NOLITHA

I called Nka and told him..

Nka: I still can't believe you pulled it off

I sat on the bed..

Me: Me too

Nka: I'm proud of you

Me: Really? I thought you would say I'm stupid

Nka: No.. You are courageous, not many women are able to make such an impulsive decision based on emotions

Me: There it is

He chuckled..

Nka: May I come check you guys later on?

Me: Yes that would be lovely

Nka: I'll stop by

Me: See you later then

Nka: Later it is Nonoki

Me: Bye

Nka: Bye

BISHOP MIKE

I immediately called Evans, before I make any mistake..

Evans: Let her be for now

Me: I can't

Evans: I know it's hard but trust me on this, let her be for now

Me: If you say so

Evans: Just concentrate on your new wife, and wait for my signal on Nolitha

Me: I'll do so

Evans: You might think this is shitty but it will work for us



Me: I hope so

.

To be continued

## MELISSA

I woke up with my head banging but not that much. I looked around, The snake was still in the cage. I got up frantically. I was dizzy too, and my vision hazy. I made my way straight to the staircase holding my dress at the bottom. I walked up the stairs and made my way out. I closed the door and sank lower against it catching my breath..

## NOLITHA

I took off my ring. I looked at myself in the mirror, The swelling was going down. The dark marks of the bruises were still there, being light skinned doesn't help much..

I took a deep breath and then exhaled, Nka was on his way here. They having a dinning area around here, we will be eating there..

It's better than going out after all, I am still a married woman..

I turned..

Me: How do I look?

Nesta: You look beautiful

Me: Thank you

Nesta: This might just work

Me: It will work, you are an equal to me now. You are

no longer my personal servant. I want you to start acting like that, I want you to start acting like a free woman. Do your hair beautifully, Do manicure on those brittled nails. Nesta you are more than just a friend, you like a Sister to me

She got emotional..

Me: I'll be back, At least there's a TV to keep you company

Nesta: Enjoy your day, He seems like a good Man. I believe in him

Me: Thank you

MELISSA

I made it to the living room, Mike showed up from the kitchen..

Mike: Melissa

I ran up to him and hugged him..

Mike: What's wrong? You shaking

He placed his hands on my face..

Me: The basement.. The snake down the basement

Mike: Mel listen

He licked his lower lip..

Mike: We need to talk

He held my hand....

Mike: Come let's talk

He led me to the dinning table..

NOLITHA

I walked outside, He was standing by the entrance door. He had his back facing the door..

In one of his traditional printed shirts, blue jeans and sneakers..

I cleared my throat..

He turned and looked at me, he was holding flowers.  
He walked up to me..

Nka: Flowers for a beautiful Lady

Me: Thank you

I took them and smiled..

Nka: I see the ring is gone

Me: I took it off

Nka: Now I can do this

He walked up to me, placed his arm around my waist.

Pulled me closer to him. We stared at each other's lips for a while and finally kissed..

This kiss was definitely different, from the ones I've been getting from that bastard. Just one kiss had this much effect to make everything well again..

We broke the kiss....

Nka: Are you ready?

Me: Yes

He held my hand and we walked in..

MELISSA

He gave me the cup of tea. Chamomile..



Mike: It'll calm you down

Me: Thank you

He sat opposite me..

Mike: Nolitha left.. She left me

Me: Divorce?

Mike: Yes and I'm going to give it to her

Me: The snake?

Mike: The.. Not everything is at it seems. Sometimes we have to do certain things to gain certain things

He stretched out his hand to mine..

Mike: I love you and with Nolitha gone you are the only wife, everything I own is yours. My money, this house. Everything!. We gonna have this comfortable life so long the snake is kept alive. All we do is feed it, you don't have to touch it. There's a slot where you slid in the rats. It's fed 3 times a day

Me: Nolitha did it?

Mike: Everyday of her life since we got married.. So are you up for it?

Me: Only on one condition

Mike: I'm listening

Me: You not gonna take another wife, don't fix things with Melissa even if she comes back crawling and no more sleeping with the girls at the compound

He kissed my hand....

Mike: I promise.. Sunday I will introduce you fully to the church as the Bishop's wife

I smiled..

Mike: Ohw and you can choose any girl in the compound since Nesta ran away with Noli

Me: Okay

NOLITHA

He opened the chair for me..

I sat down.. He kissed me on the cheek and went to sit down opposite me..

The waitress came to take our orders..

Nka: So he hasn't contacted you to threaten you?

Me: No.. Not yet

He chuckled..

Me: What?

Nka: Nothing.. Just that..I have never met a stubborn

woman like you

Me: Well get used to it

Nka: I sure will

BISHOP MIKE

Mel went upstairs to take a bath and sleep..

I called my lawyer..

Disher: Bishop

Me: Go through with the divorce, but she's getting nothing other than her car

Disher: Are you sure?

Me: Very sure

Disher: Yes Sir

NOLITHA

Me: MOG? Those Pastors are brutal are you sure you wanna do that? You don't seem savage

Nka: I will handle it

Me: That's good.. Congratulations

Nka: Thank you

(Silence)

Nka: You know what that means right?

Me: What?

Nka: I'll be in a public eye, My dirty laundry hanged

Me: I'm the dirty laundry?

Nka: You know what I mean

Me: Well don't worry about me, I have nothing to lose than my integrity.. The question is are you up for it?

He held my hand..

Nka: If the price is this beautiful.. I'm up for it

.

To be continued

36

NOLITHA

Our moment shared together over a meal was a memory I'm determined to keep with me. Nka is well spoken, Good company, Funny, Teases me every chance he gets. I couldn't stop laughing, I couldn't stop enjoying the moment..

It was sad when he had to leave, but only 1 day left to the family lunch on Saturday. I'm looking forward to it, at the same time I'm very nervous. How will his family look at me, take me, will they judge me? Will they be welcoming. It was a lot to take in..

I hugged him..



Me: I had a great time.. Thank you soo much

Nka: I did too

We broke the hug and held hands.. He placed his hand on my cheek, I closed my eyes to the feel of his touch..

Nka: You beautiful

I put mine on his..

Me: You should go, The more you stay. The more it gets harder

Nka: Yes.. Of course

He moved closer and kissed me.. He moved from

kissing me on the lips to kissing me on my nose ridge..

Nka: I'll call you

Me: I know

Nka: Bye

Me: Bye

I watched him get in his car and driving off..

MELISSA

My alarm clock went off, I was having a very good sleep but then.. Duty calls..

I got out of bed and made my way to the basement..

I am scared of rats, add that to the snake. My fear was doubled..

I kept on putting my hand and retracting it back. Put it in, retracted it..

I finally grabbed the tail. It kept on moving, I upped my pace and opened the side slot, I put it in....

All along I kept on thinking about what I have, and how much I wanted to keep it. My future should surpass my fear right now..

I went and took the other one and through it in. I didn't even wait for the feast, I made my way out as quickly as possible with my heart beating very fast...

## BISHOP MIKE

I was at the girls compound. I tried to contain myself but I couldn't, I was messed up emotionally. I was missing Nolitha..

The honest truth is that, She's been a good wife to me in so many ways. All the secrets she had to keep for me, giving up her life in making sure that I thrive. She lost herself in this marriage but she still stayed grounded, and strong-willed. I took the glass and downed the whiskey, my 3rd glass..

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

The door opened, Seipati walked in. Seipati has been

with us for almost 4 years now. She's 17 now. One of my girls, with one of the best bodies I've seen around here so far. Chubby, and her coochie is something else too...

Seipati: You've asked for me?

Me: Yes.. I need some stress reliever

She locked the door...

NOLITHA

Nesta: From that smile, I can tell that you had a great time

Me: I had a wonderful time, I'm still getting butterflies in my tummy. He is exactly as I expected,

gives our the best erotic kisses. I got wet from all that kissing that I had to restrain myself

Nesta: Hmmmm

Me: I'm telling you

I took my phone and checked, I had a text message from Mike. The mood changed.

I read it, He is accepting the divorce. He's not going to fight it..

Me: Wow.. Mike has accepted the divorce

Nesta: Really?

Me: Yes and stated that he won't take his time to

find us

Nesta: Wow.. Are you serious?

Me: Unless he's just fooling us

Nesta: With that Man, you can never tell

BISHOP MIKE

She stripped down. All the way to being left in her white bra and underwear..

Her body is magnificent, probably a size 36. Very thick and chubby..

She came up to me, unbuttoned my shirt as we kissed..

I ran my hands on her hips all the way down to her thighs. I forced my hand in between her thighs, and rubbed her inner thighs..

She ran her hand on my chest..

I wrapped my hands around her waist and pulled her closer. She sat on me and we continued kissing...

MELISSA

Mom: I'm glad you settling in well Mel

Me: Yes.. Nolitha is filling for divorce. I promise, I did nothing wrong

Mom: It seems like your Angels are with you



Me: It seems so, Sunday I will be introduced to the church as the main and only wife

Mom: I have to dress up for the occasion

Me: Yes please because after the service, we'll come back here for lunch

Mom: I'm so proud of you my daughter

Me: Thank you Mom

Mom: We will talk again, Let me go fetch the laundry

Me: Okay I love you

Mom: I love you too baby

BISHOP MIKE

A big thick ass pouncing up and down on me like that was just what I needed to relieve my stress. The more I thought about Nolitha, the more I made her go up and down more harder and faster and her moans got louder too..

Me: Yes Baaaaby!!

Being inside of her was heavenly..

Me: Yes like that!!

I moved my hands up her back, she had hers balancing on the chair as we continued..

NOLITHA

Nka: Miss me already?

Me: Uhm no.. That's not why I called

Nka: Ouch.. That was rude

Me: You still driving?

Nka: Yes.. I'm still on my way

Me: Okay.. Passed somewhere?

Nka: Are we jealous?

Me: Not at all

Nka: It's actually a bit of a long drive

Me: Okay.. So Mike accepted the divorce

Nka: Just like that?

Me: Just like that

Nka: Suspicious

Me: I know

Nka: Just don't relax, He might struck when you least expect

Me: I'll be cautious

Nka: That's my girl

.

To be continued

## NOLITHA

A day passed, then another. Nesta and I were settling in very well. We were trying to adjust to our new life, except for the dreams I've been getting. I kept on dreaming about Python, I didn't know why but she kept on appearing in my dreams..

It was a Saturday morning, Nesta and I were out searching for a flat. We only had money that was going to take care of us but only for a short while. After this, I don't know what's going to become of us....

We got a two bedroom flat, R5600 rent. Gated community, very secure hence the bit of the arm and the leg. Security is what we want most, Why settle for an affordable one when we are fugitives. Mike

said he'll leave us alone but, we still not sure..

We not gonna get expensive furniture for now, until we figure out what to do next..

PROPHET NKA

I took the job, signed the contract yesterday and today. We were shooting..

The show is not live, it's pre-recorded a day before. They were running out of their previous recorded episodes..

Today's topic settled around cults. Most churches pose as cults and that's the saddest truth..

The presenter introduced us, and specially

introduced me as their new member..

We had a guest, A young woman who was forced to live in with her Pastor and his family fell prey to being sexually abused by the Pastor. The whole church is a cult, controlled and manipulated..

She is 30 years old now. This happened when she was 19 years old..

Presenter: Let's hear what our Pastors have to say..  
Prophet Nka

Me: Brutal as it may sound but my very first question to ask is "Where are the Parents". How do you as a Parent when we have established in more than just one occasion how corrupt and dirty some Men of God are, then you hand and sacrifice your Daughter as a lamb?



Presenter: That is a good question you raising there Prophet, how do you as a Parent trust another human being with your own child

Me: A Man of God who insists on taking in a girl child should be a huge redflag we cannot keep on emphasizing that all the time

Pastor 1: If I may also cut in Prophet with no form of disrespect, are we sure that the Parents are level head when it comes to such? Many Pastors are working with dark forces where they are able to control the minds of their congregants for some reason

Me: I always advice that when one decides to join a certain church, Never leave your house before praying. Pray that God I'm heading out in search of you, wherever I'm going may I not be initiated into anything whilst you are with me

Presenter: That is a good point, nowadays.  
Congregants idolize Pastors and serve them more  
than the only living God

Me: And in search of miracles. You leave your own  
church that you have been attending for years just  
because there's a Prophet who has a tent and is  
performing miracles, that means your faith in God is  
not that strong

Presenter: We will take a break, and then come back  
with more

BISHOP MIKE

Me: And we are here

Evans: Thank you Mike

Me: My wife has prepared the guest room for you

Evans: That's beautiful

Melissa came through....

Me: Speaking of my beautiful wife, I'm sure you remember Melissa. She used to be in the compound, used to lead the church in Praise and Worship

Evans: How can I forget? Mrs Mwangi

He kissed her hand....

Mel: Pastor.. We are pleased to have you as our guest

Evans: Thank you

Me: Let's go up to the guest room and have you settled in

NOLITHA

Manager: And here are your keys

Me: Thank you

Manger: Welcome to the building, hoping you will have a comfortable stay

Me: Thank you

He walked out..

Me: Well Nesta, this our new home. The beds will be here soon

Nesta: Madam this is beautiful

She still can't address me by my name...

BISHOP MIKE

Evans: There's a lot of work to do Bishop, considering now that your ex wife is fooling around with our worst enemy

Me: I know.. So where do we start?

Evans: Obviously we can't touch this Prophet with an archangel on his side Raphael and the heavens. He's

heavily guarded

I sighed..

Evans: We can't hurt him directly but we will hurt him in another way, where he is vulnerable

Me: Nolitha

Evans: But not now, He'll recover, the love is still not that deep.. Patience will be needed on our side that's why I don't want you acting out or you will mess everything up

Me: I understand

Evans: Good..

NOLITHA

Nka was trending, he was loved the most and he just started out. I couldn't watch the video, unfortunately.. But I will watch as time goes on there's still time..

I am proud of myself, I might not have won the war as yet but I've won this battle..

Tonight I'll be joining his family for dinner, another nightmare when I don't know what to expect when I get there..

Me: We gonna need jobs, anything that's going to help us get through

Nesta: I'm good in house keeping, I'll search in that area

Me: I'm good with.. I don't know yet but we'll figure something out

Nesta: We will

BISHOP MIKE

Prophet Nka stole the whole show, a show that is definitely created to do nothing but destroy us..

Evans: We going to need a PI, find out where Noli is staying and then have her followed. When they meet, Pictures should be taken. He should be embarrassed out there being hypocritical, The world will see him for who he is

Me: That's a good idea



Evans: It'll ruin him, he'll get dropped and hated by the public

Me: I'll arrange for a PI

Evans: That is just phase 1

PROPHET NKA

We were done with the episode, It went well. It went very well....

Pastor Mnguni: You were great out there

Me: Thank you, So were you

Pastor M: We need more Men like you, Men who stand for truth

Me: That's what the show is about

The Presenter came..

Presenter: Prophet Nka, You did well

Me: Thank you so much

Presenter: Can't wait to keep on working with you

Me: Same here

Presenter: Refreshments are on this side

We followed. I took my phone out and checked, I had a DM on Instagram..

I read through, it was from a Mpho. She was detailing her story and what goes down in the Compound for Girls that Bishop Mike runs. She had watched the episode and is asking for help in exposing him

Pastor M: Are you okay Prophet?

Me: I'm okay

We went to get the refreshments...

MELISSA

I went down to the basement to feed Python. Only 3 rats were left..

I took two as always and put them in..

I headed for the stairs but stopped..

I turned back and went to look at her..

Her eyes were red, that's unusual..

I stood there and looked at her, more like she was drawing me in.. Hypnotizing me..

I couldn't move, nor could I blink..

.

To be continued

NOLITHA

I wasn't overly dressed for the family dinner. I just wore a black dress, black leather jacket and boots.. I also put on black stockings..

Nka was awfully quiet in the car...

Me: Are you okay?

Before saying anything back, He usually smiles but today. He didn't..

Nka: After the show, I received an Email from a girl Mpho

Me: Okay?

Nka: From the compound that Mike runs

I knew where this was headed. He pulled over..

Nka: Did you know about this? Know that he is sexually violating these girls?

Me: When I knew, I filed for divorce. Packed up my shit and left

Nka: How do you live with this Man for years Nolitha and not know what he's doing? You were just a trophy wife?

Me: Look I didn't know okay? I just found out lately and that's why I left

Nka: Bullshit! That Man is rotten to the core. He is very frequent with the dark world, there's a lot of shit that he's doing under the carpet. Shit that you know about and have been enjoying the benefits from, at the expense of others

Me: So you picked me up from the BnB just to judge me?

Nka: Designer clothes, Designer Bags, Expensive car what else Nolitha? What else?

Me: If you didn't tell your Family about my coming, I was gonna ask you to drive me back. For now, please don't talk to me until we get there

NESTA

Although working for Mike was the most toughest thing ever, but I always got paid..

I have 2 kids, but the father of my girls left me. They staying with my Sister, My sister came here after me. She has her own salon. She has a man and they have a child together too. I send them money every month for my girls, now that I'm out of work what am I going to do?. Her man is also trying to get by, he does frames for windows, security doors etc. They don't have much money coming in so I don't wanna burden them..

I was earning R4000 a month, I was able to send R2000 a month. The other 2k was for myself. Groceries, toiletries etc. Since I wasn't paying any rent..



I called my Sister..

Her: Nesta

Me: Sis

Her: Sis

Me: How are you?

Her: Good and you?

Me: I'm good

Her: I have something to tell you

Me: Okay?

Her: I left my Man

Me: What?

Her: He left me for someone else rather, he was tired of helping out with taking care of the kids. He started cheating and then finally left

Me: I'm so sorry about that, it's all my fault

Her: Don't say that.. He was a bastard anyway

Me: Where are you guys staying now?

Her: We renting a room, R1500 a month. It's big enough. With the money you send every month it's enough to help us, I'll add up too just to make sure

that we get through

Me: That's true

Her: I know you can help us and you already are.  
Thank you very much

Me: No.. Thank you for helping me with the  
Kids.. We'll speak again

Her: Okay take care

Me: Take care too

It's only a few weeks left until month ends, I can't  
have my kids, my niece, and sister homeless...

BISHOP MIKE

We had a meeting with the others..

Evans: Gentlemen here are your rings, blessed by the powers from Lord Khalifa.

We get our rings blessed every now and then..

Evans: Blessings and Protection

We wore them. It's 5 of us so far, including Evans. 3 Pastors and two of us Bishops..

We all have big churches, we all running on dark powers..

Evans: As much as we are working for the

underworld, There's others who are working against us. Example, Prophet Nka. This is war gentlemen they are out to get us. We can't diminish, we can't cease to exist..

We nodded..

Evans: Infront of you, you have the covenant. Goat blood, and a piece of Goat meat. Raw. Our own sacrificial covenant between us and our Lord Khalifa, who represents Jesus, our own Jesus and our God Baphomet. Drink this gentleman before prayer, it will grow your powers. Open your evil eyes so you can see who and what is happening around you

We picked up the glasses..

NOLITHA

This was a mess, a bigger mess than anything. I don't know his family and now that Me and Him aren't in good terms, I don't wanna be shut out. I don't wanna feel out of place. Can't wait for this night to be over..

We were welcomed in, or I was welcomed in rather by two ladies. His Sister, and His Mother..

The genes in this family run deep, they all look beautiful..

We exchanged hugs, so far so good..

Ma: You beautiful

Me: Thank you, so are you?

Ma: Thank you, I wonder why my Son kept you away and hidden

Me: We just recently met

Ma: Thank you for coming

Me: Thank you for inviting me

They led me to the living room, at the table. It was already set up.. Nka opened the chair for me and I sat down, they sat down too..

We all held hands and prayed..

Ma: Nka please say a prayer

Nka: Lord bless our food and bless the hands that

prepared the food. Thank you for bringing us together this evening, bless everyone who is going to share in this dinner. In Jesus name, Amen..

All: Amen

MELISSA

Ma: I think your cousin will do good as a maid

Me: Which one?

Ma: Kholo

Me: The cousin that hates me? Thought she's better than me?

Ma: This is the time to show her and her Mother that



we are better than them. She needs money to go to school, she can work it. In so doing, it'll show how better we are. That woman, my sister. She spent her whole life thinking she's better than me, just because I had a lot of children. Unemployed without a Man, she thought her kids were better. Remember she used to treat us like shit? Donated Kholo's old clothes to you?

Me: I remember

Ma: I'll talk to her Mother and tell her that you need a maid

Me: That's a good idea Ma, run with it

Ma: I'll call you again

NOLITHA

Me: 27 years and I'm about to be a divorcee, with nothing on my name. I don't mind starting over, I just want my freedom that's all

Ma: I am proud of you, I've never met any young woman like you. Girls like you would be very much addicted to the wealthy life and stay because of the riches but you just proved that the riches don't matter

Nkanyezi: I am a bit older than you, but not that old. I have a 3 year old, I'm married and hearing you speaking like this made me realize that if my marriage can collapse I can walk out and start over

Ma: I love this.. As an elder, it's my duty to speak the truth. I'm not going to sit here and lie to you girls. You girls are fortunate, this generation is fortunate. You can go to school, start a business. You have

opportunities. Women as young as you are making it, they are successful. Marriage is not an achievement, it's a blessing that's why not every woman gets married

Nka: Amen! Just felt like I was in a sermon

We laughed..

Ma: I must say though, I had my doubts with you Nolitha but now.. I am confident, you getting divorced and currently separated. I'm happy my Son is not helping a married woman cheat

Nkayenzi: True

Ma: I don't know if this is jumping the line or what but.. Welcome to the family Nolitha

Nkayenzi: Welcome

Me: Thank you

BISHOP MIKE

We went to the alter. Black and red candles lit up..  
We knelt down facing the portrait of Baphomet,  
wearing black robes and praying unto him..

NESTA

I looked at Melissa's contacts..

I called her..

Mel: Hello?

Me: Hi..Madam it's me.. It's Nesta

Mel: What the hell do you want?

Me: I know this is.. I shouldn't be calling you

Mel: You right about that, You shouldn't be calling me. So why are you?

Me: I.. I just want to apologize Madam

Mel: Don't call me

Me: Madam Nolitha she. I had no choice.. I just need my job back please.. I'm begging you

Mel: No.. You have been replaced

Me: Madam please.. I really need the money

Mel: Goodbye and please don't ever call me again

She hung up..

NOLITHA

Ma: Let me clear the table for dessert

Me: It's okay I can do it

Ma: You a guest here, you don't have too

Me: I insist

Nka: I'll help her

We got up and cleared the table for dessert.

Nka: I'm sorry about today

Me: It's okay, you were speaking your mind. Saying exactly what you felt

Nka: Nonoki come on

Me: I'm having a good time with your family, Please don't ruin it.. If you can't help out then there's nothing to talk about

.

To be continued

39

NOLITHA

Me: Dinner was delicious Mrs Mhlaba, I had a beautiful time thank you very much

Ma: Hoping this won't be the last of it

She said that whilst looking at Nka..

Nka: It won't

We shared a hug..

Me: Send my goodbyes to Nkanyezi and Ella



Ma: I will.. Have a safe trip back home

Me: Thank you

Nka: I'll see you later

Ma: Okay Baby

MELISSA

We were sitting at the table having dinner..

Me: Guess who called me?

Mike: Who?

Me: Nesta

Mike: What did she want?

Me: She wanted her job back

Mike: And?

Me: I said no

Mike: Why?

Me: I already have someone, my cousin

Mike: Your cousin?

Me: Yes.. Kholofelo

Mike: Nesta has worked for us for years, she knows things that other people don't know and not supposed to know. She has been loyal, faithful and discreet. Can we say the same about your cousin?

I sighed..

Me: My cousin will do well.. She doesn't have to do anything just carry out her job that's all

Mike: As long as you make sure that you keep her in line, Don't tell her anything and don't let her find out about anything then we are good

Me: I Promise

Mike: Good

NOLITHA

When Nka was driving me back, He tried to make conversation, Tried to crack jokes but I wasn't giving in..

He tried holding my hand and I moved it away..

Nka: Come on Nonoki, I'm sorry.. I didn't mean to say all those things

Me: You know what hurts about it all +

Nka: Yes?

Me: Not accusing me, but you making it seem like I knew and kept quiet. What kind of a Person do you think I am? As a woman living in such a cruel world

do you think I'll just sit back and let young girls be violated? My leaving him proves that I hate what he's doing

Nka: I know and I'm very sorry about that

Me: It's okay

Nka: So we good?

Me: I think so

He pulled over..

Nka: I wanna try something out

Me: What?

Nka: Come this side and drive

Me: Uhm okay

We switched...

MIKE

Me: What can you tell me about Prophet Nka?

Evans: When I checked him, he's heavily protected. Heaven his Father. Unlike other Prophets I know. The likes of Zaine Radebe, who possess an all round Prophet gift. Nka is mostly blessed to heal with words, through preaching, and prayer. His words heal not the heart but the soul too. He has talked a lot of people from committing suicide, he defeated the demon of suicide many times and helped restore

the faith of others. He is an important and crucial part of the spiritual family therefore warrior Angels would rain down before we even touch a hair on his head

Me: Someone who is this much protected should be bagging

Evans: Yeah remember God doesn't work with those who have pride

Me: Fair enough

Evans: To get to him.. It's going to need patience, let the love between them run deep. If we get to Nolitha we might just be able to fight him

Me: I've heard that boy speak, he's fucken good. I'm sure he knows all the tactics

Evans: I'm sure he does but a man in love is the weakest Man on earth

Me: Cheers to that

NOLITHA

Me: What now?

Nka: Take off your stockings

Me: What?

Nka: Take them off

Me: Are you serious?



Nka: Yes

Me: I'm driving

Nka: Lower them then

Me: This is ridiculous

I tried lowering them, wasn't easy though..

Me: Now what?

Nka: Keep your eyes on the road

Me: Okay

Nka: No matter what happens, keep them on the road. You fuck up we gonna die in a terrible accident

Me: Are you serious?

Nka: Very

Me: Okay

He ran his hand on my thigh then in between my thighs. He slowly slid his hand in..

Me: Nka

Nka: Shhhhh

I opened them up wider, and he slid it in inside my underwear..

My heart started racing and his fingers found their way to tickling my clit..

Me: Nka

Nka: Keep them on the road

He rubbed my clit and the pleasure kicked in. He lowered his hands to the opening of my vagina. He rubbed me there too and went up to my clit again and again..

Me: Nkaaaaa..

Him: On the road.. On the road..

He continued and I couldn't take it anymore I pulled

over..

Him: And nou?

I closed my eyes and opened them again..

Nka: Let's switch again

Me: What?

Nka: Fun is over, you pulled over

Me: You can't be serious

Nka: Come on let's switch up so I can get you to the  
BnB

I can't believe this guy!..

NESTA

I went to the kitchen..

Me: Good evening

Two ladies were washing the dishes.. They looked at me..

Me: Sorry to be bothersome but

Lady 1: Is all well?

Me: Yes.. I was wondering if you.. If you don't need any helpers, I'm good with that

Lady 1: Uhm.. Unfortunately we don't need anyone for now but we'll let you know

Me: Okay thank you

.

To be continued

Just a few votes left for the bonus, please check if you can't vote again if you've voted earlier on

40

NOLITHA

He dropped me off at the gate..

Nka: Walk in while I'm looking at you, to make sure that you get in safe

Me: I'm not a child

He held both my hands..

Nka: I like what's beginning to happen here, I hate it that I like it more than I should

Me: Honestly it's something I've never felt before, It's amazing.. It's the side of Love and affection that I've never fully experienced. It feels warm, It feels real and it brings joy

Nka: That type of love doesn't flourish easily, there's always forces working against it. We can only make it work if we are stronger together, no matter what happens

Me: I know.. It won't be easy especially with an ex

husband like mine

Nka: He's defenseless.. He's weak on it's own, It's the forces surrounding him that make him but him on his own. He's weak

Me: I wanna see where this will lead

Nka: I wanna see where this will lead too

He kissed me while brushing my wig..

Nka: Good night

Me: Good night

Nka: I'll call you



Me: I will too

MELISSA

I prepared my outfit for tomorrow at church, I will be introduced to the church as the Bishop's wife. The only wife he has..

I was excited, very excited. This is a big deal and I've always been wanting this..

I walked downstairs to the kitchen..

Pastor Evans walked in..

Me: Pastor

I bowed a little..

Evans: Mrs Mwangi

Me: I was just getting myself water with lemon, I drink it every night

Evans: I understand.. Please don't let me get in your way

Me: If I may ask, when will your meeting with my husband finish?

Evans: Your husband is not around

Me: Ohw.. He didn't tell me that he was going out

Evans: He's getting more rats for Python, such deals

you make at night

Me: Blessed.. I should go to sleep

Evans: Sleep well

I walked to upstairs to my bedroom....

**BISHOP MIKE**

What I love about Seipati is that whatever she does, She puts her 100%. Be it a blow job, a woman on top she teaches herself. I'm suspecting she watches a lot of pornography because she does a better job than most girls I've had a sexual encounter with here, Melissa included..

She was in between my legs giving me one hell of a

blow job. I wouldn't say that I love her, I mean there's a woman that you love and a woman that you have great sex with, Seipati was one of those. She gives out great sex.. She was really working my crotch, and massaging my balls with her other hand. The glass of whiskey that I was holding started to tremble, to make the moment more nasty I got her off. Instructed her to squeeze her breasts, she did. I poured the whiskey on her boobs and sat her ontop of me. I licked her up as she moved around in circles on me..

NOLITHA

Nesta was crying when I got to the bedroom

Me: Nesta

She quickly wiped her tears..

Me: What's wrong?

Nesta: It's nothing

Me: You are crying, It can't be nothing

Nesta: It's alright I promise

I sat next to her... I hugged her..

Me: What's wrong? Talk to me

Nesta: I send money to my girls every month, and now I just realized that this month I can't send.. I'm not working

Me: Ohh Nesta

Nesta: I don't know what I'm going to do

Me: We will think of something

Nesta: It's only a few weeks left until month end, I can't.. I wanted to go back I called Melissa

Me: You did what?

Nesta: I'm sorry I..

Me: You should've came to me Nesta, I still have money.. We could've worked something out

Nesta: I know and I'm sorry

Me: How could you be so careless?

Nesta: I am not like you Madam.. You don't have kids, you have your whole life ahead of you I have kids I need to think of

Me: We are a team Nesta.. We talk, you just don't decide to put what we've worked so hard for in jeopardy

Nesta: I was doing what I thought was best for my kids

I sighed..

Me: I think we should sleep before we say things we both are going to regret.. I'll go and bath

## PROPHET NKA

When I got home I showered and prayed..

I communicated with the holy spirit and the only answer I got was that, My relationship with Nolitha will be difficult. Possibly the most difficult relationship I'll ever be in..

They will test me through her, they will use her against me. My faith will be tested beyond, and Nolitha's faith in God should suffice. She can be provided protection, but it won't do much if her faith is weak..

Melissa seems hard headed, strong and fights her way through. Whatever storm is coming, I wish she will pull through...



MELISSA

I woke up the next morning and Mike was preparing himself for church. I don't even know at what time he got back last night..

Mike: Good morning

Me: Morning

Mike: How did you sleep?

Me: I slept good and you?

Mike: I slept good too

I got out of bed..

Me: At what time did you get in?

Mike: A little late

I hugged him from behind..

Me: I missed you

Mike: Melissa don't start, we have to prepare for church

Me: Come on, just one session

Mike: Mel

I kissed me on his neck and lowered my hands to his

crotch..

Mike: Stop

Me: Come on

He grabbed my hands, turned around and threw me down..

Mike: It's Sunday and we preparing for church but you wanna act like a hoe?? Get your filthy ass and prepare for church and stop being led by what's in between your legs

.

To be continued

## NOLITHA

I was disappointed at Nesta but at the same time I understood where she was coming from. I wish she could've told me before we left, then I would've given her a chance to say No.. Truly the life I'm trying to establish on my own right now I can't have a weak link and Nesta has proven to be one.. Running away from a dangerous man is not easy, I feel Mike's silence is very loud. I know my husband too well and he will retaliate..

The next morning Nesta woke up to me sitting on the bed looking at her..

Nesta: Madam

Shook my hands together and looked at them..

Me: You are right, The life I'm about to pursuit it's not for you. I have nothing to lose so I can live on the run but you can't.. You have a family, kids to take care of

Nesta: I don't understand

Me: I have 40k in my account, I'll give you 20k. I'll take 20k and we split

Nesta: Is this about last night?

Me: I cannot be doing this with someone who doesn't have a glimpse of hope, someone who doesn't strive for change. Life is about taking risks and if I'm bringing someone to it, I need someone who is ready to be on the run with me. We can be sleeping under the bridge so long I know we free

from the bondages of that house and that man I'm good, because Nesta. I'd rather sleep under the bridge than go back there, I didn't come this far to go back.. So I'll give you 20k,you can decide to find your way or go back but whatever you decide know I won't blame you

Nesta: Madam I'm sorry

I got up from the bed..

Me: I'm going to bath, after this. We going to the Atm

Nesta: Madam I'm sorry.. I'm truly sorry

Me: Me too, but the honest truth is that.. I need people I can trust and I can't trust you. I'm sorry

She covered her face with her hands...

Nesta: I'm sorry Madam, I'm truly sorry

I took my toilet bag and walked to the bathroom..

MELISSA

I stood there and looked at the church, Mike was standing behind me from a distance..

I looked at my Mother and siblings..

Me: G.. Good morning

I tried to keep calm, I was nervous. I don't wanna ruin this..

Me: I would like to thank my husband for the opportunity, and the church for granting me such respect to speak to the congregation

I licked my lips..

Me: I am not Mrs Nolitha Mwangi, not trying to be one. All I can say is that I'm willing to carry out my devotion to the church, practice what I preach. I was a virgin when my husband picked me.. Fully devoted to my purity and I am willing to uphold that promise and never go back to it.. Thank you, God bless

I stepped back from the mic, Mike helped me to get back to my sit..

NOLITHA



MELISSA

I was still not over what happened this morning, but I had to keep up appearances. I was at church, there was no room to be sad and depressed..

I sat the first part of the sermon. My family was there, the church was full. I couldn't act out of character nor impulsive, so I absorbed it all in. All the emotions I had deep inside..

Mike: I stand before you now to tell the congregation before you hear it somewhere else that my first wife of many years left me, she moved out of home and has filed for divorce. Anyone who knows me knows I love my wife, and the church elders can attest that my wife has been unstable. Many have seen the videos of her acting out of character. The honest truth is that I tried my all, but my all wasn't enough. So I decided to put everything in God's hands. Many will see this as an act of being impulsive but as a

leader I can't lead without a woman behind me. In the mist of all my darkness, God sent through a beautiful, strong, dedicated and loving woman my way.. My wife, Mrs Melissa Mwangi

He stretched out his hand..

Mike: Darling please come up

I got up and fixed my dress. I lifted it up and made my way to the pulpit as everyone gave me a standing ovation. When I was halfway through, he gave me his hand and walked me up to the pulpit..

He kissed me on the cheek..

Mike: Don't embarrass Me

NOLITHA

We drove through to the mall, I parked..

Nesta: Madam we don't have to do this

Me: Get out

Nesta: M-

Me: Nesta get out!!

She opened the door and got out, I got out too with my bag...

We made our way to the atm..

I took out my purse and got my card out. I slid it in, withdrew her 20k..

Me: Our Journey ends here

Nesta: Madam please

Me: Goodbye Nesta

I walked back to my car...

MELISSA

Mike stood behind me at a far distance..

Me: When my husband found me I was still a virgin, pure to the core. I have held up to the saying of "Practicing what you preach". I uphold my promise to

lead the church in truth and full devotion.. I am grateful for the respect the church has shown me today. I am not Mrs Nolitha Mwangi and I don't want to be like her, all I want is to be given a chance. To help lead, love and be true to everyone. Thank you, God bless..

I picked up my dress again and stepped back from the mic. Mike put his arm around my waist and led me back to my sit..

NOLITHA

I got to the BnB and packed up my everything. With Nesta knowing exactly where I'm situated I can't take chances..

I got my bags and went to the reception..

Me: Good morning, I would like to check out

Receptionist: I thought you'll be here for a week

Me: It's okay I don't need a refund

Reception: Okay please sign here

She got the book for me...

MELISSA

The rest of the sermon went well, 4 hours of service..

As soon as it was over, already a few members lined up before me. Hugging me, Praising me and bowing down at my feet..

I acted cool, and went with the flow..

My Mother made her way to me..

Ma: Melissa

Me: Ma

We shared a hug...

Ma: I'm so proud of you baby

She put her hands on my cheek with tears streaming down my cheeks..

Me: I know.. This is a start of good things and I want

you to share this happiness with me

Ma: I know.. I will.. I promise I will

Me: Thank you

NOLITHA

I pulled over..

I didn't even know where I was heading too, and I was overwhelmed. I don't easily cry unless something has gotten into me really bad, and this situation was getting to me bad..

MELISSA

We were driven home, 3 other cars behind us to drop



off my family..

Mike: See, everything is going to workout

He took my hand and kissed it..

Mike: Just do everything I say, Be a good wife and everything is going to work out

I nodded..

Me: I promise

NOLITHA

After crying for a long time, I wiped my face and fixed the rear view mirror. Something happened, I could swear that I saw python at the back seat. I

turned and checked, there was nothing there.. Am I losing my mind? What's happening?

I glanced at the back seat and took a deep breath..

.

To be continued

42

NOLITHA

I called Nka, it was in the afternoon I'm sure he was done at church.. He picked up after the 3rd ring..

Nka: Nonoki

Me: Hey

Nka: Are we alright?

Me: No.. Hope I'm not disturbing you

Nka: Not at all.. Talk to me

Me: My uhm.. Nesta and I parted ways

Nka: Reason being?

Me: She was weak, She wanted to go back. I understand though, she has kids and needs an income

Nka: Is she back there?

Me: I gave her 20k and we parted ways

Nka: Where are you?

Me: Driving around, Had to leave the BnB. Looking for another place

Nka: Come to my house

Me: I don't wanna be a burden

Nka: You don't have to do this alone, we'll figure it out.. Together, I promise

Me: Okay.. I'm on my way

Nka: Hey

Me: Yes?

Nka: I love you

Me: I love you too

Nka: Too soon

I laughed and hung up...

NESTA

I had no choice but to go to my sisters. I called her and she told me to come, directed me to their new place....

I got there and she was happy to see me, together with the girls..

She made me a cup of tea and I told her everything that has happened..

Sis: I'm so sorry

Me: That's why I have to.. That's why I am deciding to take my girls, so it'll be less of a burden for you

Sis: I like having the Girls around

Me: I know but you also trying so it's fair I take them with

Sis: What about school?

Me: I'll rent a room close to their school

Sis: I'm really sorry

Me: It's okay.. Thank you for everything and I'm sorry my burden costed you your Man

Sis: It's okay

Me: Tomorrow morning I'll go search for a room when they go to school

Sis: Okay no problem

MELISSA

Ma: Kholo is going to come tomorrow morning

Me: That's good.. She didn't give you a hassle?

Ma: She did but she needs the money to pay for school, so she doesn't have a choice

Me: That's good

Ma: Bishop.. I'm grateful for giving my Niece this job, helping provide for my family

Mike: It's okay.. We are family

Ma: Melissa you should be a good wife

Mike squeezed my thigh...

Mike: She is.. That I can promise you



NOLITHA

He was already standing at the gate. I got out of the car and went to him..

Nka: Come here

He gave me a tight hug...

Nka: It's okay we'll figure it all out okay?

Me: Okay

He kissed me on my cheek..

Nka: Let's go in

MELISSA

My family had a great time and that's all I was looking forward too today..

I walked them to the cars..

Ma: We had a great time, the food was delicious too

Me: Thank you Ma

She hugged me..

Ma: I'll call you when I get home

Me: Okay

Ma: I love you

Me: I love you too

NOLITHA

We took my bags inside, He explained my situation to his Mother. She processed it through before saying anything..

Ma: You can stay here for as long as you need, until you figure out something

Me: Thank you for your kindness

Ma: It's okay

Nka: She can take Ella's room

Ma: Yes.. Ella will move into my bedroom for a while

Nka: Have to go and talk to her about it

Ma: She'll be fine

Nka: If Ella doesn't want, She'll move into my bedroom.. I'll sleep on the couch

Ma: We'll talk to Ella

Nka: Okay

Ma: We'll have you settled in Noli, let me go talk to my Granddaughter and then prepare the bedro for you

Me: Thank you so much Ma

Ma: You welcome Sisi

She got up and left us..

Me: I cannot thank you enough

He held my hand..

Nka: We a team

Me: We a team

MELISSA

I checked Twitter and I was trending, together with

Noli. I was excited when I saw myself trending but as I read the tweets my heart sank..

"What exactly is this old Man doing with young girls kanti? Isn't the first wife like 27? This one is 19?" - @Xhasibe

.

"What is a 19 year old doing with an old Men? Gold digger much?" - @Lizzy

.

"She ain't even beautiful, the first wife was more than beautiful" - @Sithe

.

"Ganti where are their Parents? Which parent would allow their 19 year old to marry an old man?" - @Nono

.

"I don't trust these Men of God, look at this mediocre" - @Pule

How can people be so evil? They don't even know me to be say such filth!

NOLITHA

Nka: Listen to me, God would never put you in this situation if he didn't think that you were going to make it

Me: It's hard, life is hard

Nka: I know.. No one said life would be easy, we struggle through but with God's grace and strength he gives us.. We make it

Me: I just wanna be at peace and be content

He wiped my tears..

Nka: It's going to be alright, never lose faith. Without faith, you have nothing to keep you going at your lowest

.

To be continued

Last night we were slightly off from meeting the target with our bonus



43

NOLITHA

Funny how I trend on social media from time to time because of my life still very much attached to my husband and his drama..

It was a balance, they were saying both good and bad things about me. I didn't care anymore because I've grown a thick skin now to such things....

I was all for occupying the outside room, but it still needed work to be done. Not a lot, just a few touch ups here and there..

Nka had a late service, his church does two services every Sunday. Morning service and a night service..

Nka: Maybe you can join us

Me: I don't think that's a good idea, don't wanna  
cause drama

I buttoned his shirt..

Nka: It's just a church service, not that I'd actually  
have you standing by my side as I preach. I think you  
can do with some fresh air

Me: Well then, how can I say no to the Lord.. I'll  
prepare myself

MELISSA

Mike walked into the bedroom..

Me: You won't believe what the internet is saying about me, such brutality

He looked at me..

Me: The tweets are hateful and brutal from people who don't even know me, don't even know my life

Mike: This is what you've been doing all along? Giving a care about what people say? I went down to check on python. She hasn't been fed

Me: It slipped my mind

Mike: How can such an important part of our lives slip your mind? For someone who is studying medicine you are very stupid

Me: I just forgot, it happens. I'm human after all

Mike: Yes.. Of course my apologies

I went back on my phone..

I didn't even notice him walking up to me, until he dragged me off the bed and threw me down on the floor..

Me: Awwwwwwww!!

He dragged me straight to the bathroom. Locked the door and filled it up with water..

Mike: I didn't marry you to lie on the bed, look pretty and be on your phone! Nolitha was a true wife. She knew her duties as a wife and never made me to be

on her back constantly. I am starting to regret why I married you, clearly you are here to help destroy me instead of helping me!.. Forgot one important thing

Me: I'm sorry

He rolled up the sleeves of his t-shirt..

Mike: if you can't act like a wife, I'll teach you how to act like one.. Come here!!

NOLITHA

I recieved a phone call from Nesta..

Me: Hello?

Nesta: Madam.. Sorry to disturb you but I just

wanted to inform you that I am at my Sister's place.  
I'm safe

Me: I'm glad to hear that, and I hope there won't be  
any beef between us

Nesta: No I'm not angry.. I understand what you did  
and thank you for the money

Me: Nesta you don't have to go back there, you can  
start over. Starting over is hard I know but you have  
to try

Nesta: I know Madam

Me: Okay I'll talk to you later

Nesta: Okay Madam.. Bye

Me: Bye

MELISSA

I felt like I was being punished for Nolitha leaving.  
We had a busy day, Python slipped my mind..

He drowned me in the bathtub, he put me under for a few. His grip was strong I couldn't push myself to lift up my head and get it out of the water, I couldn't fight him off..

He pulled me out, and I took a breather..

Mike: You are useless! I liked you better when you were at the compound

He put me under again...

He took me out..

Me: I'm so sorry.. I'll never do it again I promise

He placed me under...

NOLITHA

Nka: Look at you

I smiled..

Nka: You look beautiful

Me: Thank you, you look handsome too



Nka: I appreciate the comment

He held my hand..

Nka: Ready to go?

Me: Wait.. We going in the same car? Arriving together?

Nka: Yes

Me: But

Nka: Can you stop worrying about what people will say?

Me: I don't want to ruin your life

Nka: You won't ruin my life, I'm an adult.. I know very well what I'm getting myself into. Right now, what's stands between you and I is the divorce to be finalized and you need to do a 7 days cleansing be rid of the aura from Mike and get him out of your system

Me: How do we do it?

Nka: You'll start tomorrow.. Corse salt, a white candle and a prayer.. I'll guide you through the deliverance don't worry

Me: Thank you so much

Nka: Only because I love you

MELISSA

He took me out when I was about to pass out

He threw me on the floor and I coughed out water..

Mike: Don't ever think you are irreplaceable, there's a lot of girls in the compound that can replace you.. If you don't clean out your act, you'll be replaced quicker than you can blink your eyes. Never forget that

PROPHET NKA

Me: Let me go get my keys

I went to the bedroom to get my car keys and phone, when I felt this cold shiver pass behind the back of

my neck..

I turned around and looked around, I saw a snake on my bed. A big python..

I felt lightheaded, the room started spinning around..

I tried finding my feet, but I got more weaker. I dropped down to the floor..

MELISSA

I cuddled myself at the corner of the bathroom after he had walked out..

Tears streaming down..

My hair still wet, my heart beating fast. Aren't

marriages supposed to be beautiful? This one was dragging. Starting to be an emotional drag..

NOLITHA

Ma: I thought you and Nka were leaving

Me: He went to get his car keys, honestly he's taking long. I'll go check him

Ma: Okay

I walked to the bedroom..

Me: Nka

I opened the door and walked in, he was on the floor. Trembling with foam coming out of his mouth..

Me: Ohhhhhh my goodness!! Nka!!!

I ran to him..

Me: Ma!!..

.

To be continued

44

NOLITHA

He had to be taken in, he was unconscious. I wonder what happened. He was fine, He looked fine.. I walked up and down in the corridor, nervous. He just fell sick out of the blue..

Ma: Nolitha

I looked at her..

Ma: I know you are worried, so am I but walking up and down like that is making me dizzy

Me: I'm sorry.. I'm just worried

Ma: I know.. Please have a sit child

I sat down..

Ella: Is Uncle going to be okay?

Ma: He's going to be fine

PROPHET NKA

I was in the space of nothing, in the space of emptiness. Only darkness reigned..

Voice: I'm sorry that we had to meet up like this

I turned and looked at her..

Me: Who are you?

Her: I am Nolitha's Mother

Me: Nolitha's Mother?

Her: We don't have much time, if you don't go back you'll be stuck here.. I need you to get a message to my Daughter, I'd gladly appreciate it. I've waiting for at least a sincere spiritual person who'll be close to



her that can give her this message. I am trapped inside a python. My husband had me killed so I could be a sacrifice for his riches, tell her that night when I was brutally murdered. It wasn't an act of misfortune, it was planned

Me: How will Nolitha believe me?

Her: Tell her "God never fails", she will understand

Me: I will.. Is there a way to save you?

Her: Only when python dies will my soul be free and will my husband's riches disappear

Me: We will find a way

Her: No rather not.. I want my Daughter to stay very

far from that man, my soul will be freed. Tomorrow, next year or any other year but I don't want Nolitha going back to that Man or anywhere near him.. It's for her own safety

Me: I will give her the message

Her: Thank you.. Now you have to go

MELISSA

Me: Amen

I got up from the floor and sat on the bed, I had just finished praying..

Mike wasn't around, he hasn't been back ever since that incident..

"You are replaceable"..

I can't imagine losing it all in such a short space of time. I've worked hard to get this, to achieve this, to make it work. I murdered someone, I sacrificed a lot..  
I can't lose it all

I went and drank two sleeping pills, then I got in bed and tried to sleep...

NOLITHA

The Dr came to us..

Me: How is he?

He looked at us..

Dr: He's awake

That was a relief...

Ma: What was wrong with him?

Dr: Honestly speaking it's a complicated case because we were sure that he had slipped into a coma and then he woke up on his own. His vitals are good, no sign of anything. In my years of studying medicine I don't have a diagnosis

Me: Can we see him?

Dr: Yes we'll discharge him in the morning, wanna keep him overnight to check him

Ma: I understand.. So long he's fine

Dr: You can go and see him

We made our way to his ward...

BISHOP MIKE

Evans: I trust you will be well

Me: I will be

Evans: I saw your church was full today

Me: We have 50 new members

Evans: Don't forget to follow and stick to the rules,

The Prophet cannot recruit more than us. He can't bring people to the light, show them the light. Don't take him lightly, don't undermine him. He can be your doom, your downfall. Or you can be his

Me: I know Pastor

Evans: Try and treat your new wife right, there's way to manipulate her than being abusive. The Prophet has Nolitha by his side now, Melissa should be strong too

Me: Yes Sir

Evans: When I come back, It will be for the succubus.. It will to destroy them

Me: I'm ready

Evans: Goodbye Brother

Me: Goodbye

We shared a hug, His flight leaves in the early AMs...

NOLITHA

I hugged him..

Me: You scared us

His Mother hugged him too..

Nka: I'm good, it was just a seizure

Me: A seizure?

Nka: I work a lot, haven't had a good rest in a long time

Me: You need to rest

Ella walked in..

Ella: Uncle

Nka: Hey

He picked her up and sat her on the bed..

Ella: Are you sick?

Nka: A little, but I'm fine now.. The Dr has helped



Ella: Are you going to come back home?

Nka: Yes.. Tomorrow morning

Ella: I'm glad

Me: I'll get us something to eat, saw a McDonald's that's open 24 hours

Nka: I'll transfer the money to you tomorrow when we get home

Me: You don't have to

Nka: I insist

Men and their Egos..

I walked out to the car when my phone rang, I answered without checking..

Me: Hello

Mike: The divorce is going through

I stopped walking..

Me: I know

Mike: Sooner than you know, by month end everything will be finalized and you'll be a free woman. Then you can gladly open up your legs for the Prophet

Me: What I do and with who is not any of your concern anymore

Mike: Just know your whoring ways, you getting nothing from this marriage other than your car

Me: Wouldn't have it any other way

Mike: Bye

Me: Bye

I proceeded..

PROPHET NKA

Ma: What really happened?

I looked at Ella..

Me: I had a seizure

Ma: A seizure?

Me: Yes

Ma: Okay then.. I'll go and check up on Nolitha

Me: Becareful

Ma: I will

She walked out..

.

To be continued

45

NOLITHA

[A MONTH LATER]

This was probably going to be the most peaceful divorce process between two people who were once married..

Nka was sitting next to me, On the other side. It was Melissa and Mike..

I can't believe Melissa is still with him, with this man who has done so many evil things.

Nka told me about what happened, I trustee what he said because he said a phrase that my Mother used

to say to me all the time. Though the memory of my childhood is a bit foggy, but I remember the phrase..

Deep down I wanted to skip over and strangle him to death, This Man had my Mother killed. This Man is keeping a python in his basement that has my Mother's soul trapped inside of it. All along, we've been living off my Mother's blood and pain. There more she suffers as a spirit, the more he becomes rich. Lately his riches have doubled, his church is growing big. He released another book "The sorrows of a Man".

I haven't read it, I have no intentions of doing so. It came out two days ago and already sold 1k copies. It sells for R450..

I know I'm included in it, and not in a good way..

Nka: Something is off about him

Me: That's nothing new

Nka: His aura is unsettling with me, it has grown stronger than the last time. I don't like it

Me: We will be gone soon

Melissa flashed her big rock, her hand was sitting on her thigh. I see she has gained a few pounds, she's glowing. Not a pregnant glow because that man can't produce. It's the comfortable life she's living or that she thinks is comfortable.. Wait until it all crumbles down..

Judge: I believe both parties have agreed on the terms of the divorce. Mrs Mwangi is not liable to anything because of the prenup she signed..

I didn't want anything from him, not even R100s. I even sold my clothes to buy new ones, traded my car for a much settled one. One that didn't come with my Mother's blood.

Me: I don't want anything from this Man, I wouldn't accept a nickle even if he offered it to me

He chuckled....

Mike: I think you would accept it, seeing you basic now. From Riches to rags, you are a joke Nolitha!

Nka: Rather a joke than living off a lie

Mike: How does this involve you?

Me: It involves him because your sneaky bastard evil



ass is living Off comfortably because of my Mother. You think I don't know what you did to her, or that she's trapped inside a snake? A snake you keeping in your basement?

Mike: Do you have any proof? Those are serious allegations Nolitha

Judge: Order!

Me: You'll rot in hell!!!

NESTA

Life got extremely hard when we moved out of my Sister's place. We got our own place, renting a two roomed house. Kitchen, Bedroom with a bathroom included... I have two girls a one room wasn't going to cut it.

Rent is a bit expensive, R1300 a month. I had to start searching for a job and I found it.

Working as a maid..

The bitch Part about it, Is that the Husband is a bastard. When the wife is not around he sexually harrasses me but gives me money. He sleeps with me and I hate it, but I have no choice to keep at it just so I can get the money...

He uses a condom to prevent an unwanted pregnancy.. That's the only good thing about him...

He's a business Man, Works for himself. He chooses when to go to work.. Which gives him more time to sexually violate me..

NOLITHA

After what felt like forever, I was finally free from this Man.. I was a divorced woman..

Nka and I walked out of that court room without looking back..

Nka: Just keep walking don't say anything

When we got out, Paparazzi was already waiting outside. After all, He is Bishop Mwangi. What's his life without drama..

A few church members were standing there too with boards supporting him. The police escorted us to the car..

They threw insults at me, how holy of church goers..

Paparazzi: Ms Nolitha.. Ms Nolitha, care to comment?

Me: I have no comment

Paparazzi: What about what's written in the book?  
Did you really leave the Bishop for the Prophet? Is  
that why your marriage came to an end? Because of  
your adulterous ways?

I stopped...

Me: What?

Paparazzi: Well we are seeing you with the Prophet  
so??

Me: I divorced him because he is a-

Nka pulled me away..

Me: What are you doing? People must know the truth

He opened the door..

Nka: Get in!

I got in.. He went the other side and got in too..

Me: What was that for? People must know the truth

Nka: He's just gonna turn the truth, He's going to twist it to work on his favour. Just make you look more unstable and his church members, don't even count on them. He put a hoax on them they just

gonna contribute it to you lying more. You said you wanted this to be over, you wanted to be over with him and start afresh. Doing that is lowering yourself to his standards and he will beat you with experience! That's not a fight you challenge him on. An eagle doesn't fight in an enemies territory, it takes the enemy up to it's territory. Fighting him in his territory, you will lose! And it's only going to hurt you more

MELISSA

We walked out and he was holding my hand..

Mike released a statement to the paparazzi.

Mike: It had to come to this, As much as religion is against divorce but I had too. My wife or ex wife rather was cheating on me with Prophet Nkanyiso Mhlaba. She left our marital home to move in with him at his home. A home he shares with his family

and none of them saw anything wrong with that.

He took a deep breath..

Mike: I am hurt but God is by my side. I have God by my side and a new beautiful wife who has been nothing but faithful and respectful towards me. I'm blessed, God came through for me.. I have nothing further to say

We walked down to our car..

NOLITHA

I unzipped my bag and took out the small pack of tissues, I took one from it..

Me: I haven't done anything to anyone, I'm a good

Person. I don't deserve all of this, all of what's happening. God has a dark sense of humor

Nka: You can't think like that

Me: I have been trying to contain myself, keep it all in but deep down. I'm hurt, it hurts. It cuts deep

He held my hand..

Nka: Let it all out

MELISSA

I kept on stealing glances at him, He was staring out of the window..

Mike: You wanna know if I did it? If all the



accusations are true?

Me: Yes?

He turned his head and looked at me..

Mike: Give me your phone

I got my phone from my bag and I gave it to him. He unlocked and checked..

Mike: Yes all the accusations are true

My heart started beating fast..

He gave me back my phone...

Mike: I did it, That's how dangerous I am

I put my phone back in my bag..

Mike: See how I'm destroying Nolitha? If you dare mess with me, I will ruin you too

.

To be continued

46

NOLITHA

When we got home, Nka's Mother was not feeling well. She hasn't been feeling well for a while now. She has bronchitis..

One part of my life that's going good is that, Nka found me a job. It's nothing serious, Nothing fancy

but at the end of the day it's a job. A friend of his has a cleaning tender, we clean at the mall..

I get R4 000 a month, Today I didn't go because of the court case..

Nka's Mother. Her cough was terrible, I was getting worried. She was on the bed..

Ma: How did it go at the court?

She coughed up with the tissue covering her mouth..

Me: It went well

She gave me a faint smile..

Ma: I'm glad

Her lips were dry, Her eyes seemed heavy..

Me: You should go to the hospital

She shook her head..

Ma: Give me your hand

I gave her my hand..

Ma: Take care of him

Me: Please don't say such

Ma: I know we've known each other for a short while,  
but I have faith in you. I've never seen my Son this

happy before

Me: You just have to go to the hospital

Ma: The hospital won't help, My time has come.. It's time for me to go.. I'm just happy that I have lived to witness this moment, See my Son happy with the woman he loves

This made me emotional, Today it was a bad day. An emotional day..

Me: It can't end like this, Nka won't recover

Ma: Just take care of him please, Promise me that

Me: I promise

Ma: I need to rest

Me: Okay.. I'll check up on you soon

NESTA

I laid back on the bed with my legs wide open.. He stood there and rolled the condom on himself..

I turned my head and faced the wall..

It's just sex, no emotions involved. Get through it and get my money month end, and my Kids are taken care of..

He got in bed and opened my legs more wider, I closed my eyes..

Him: The least you can do Nesta is look at me, It's not like I'm raping you

Then what is it called what he's doing because I'm not fully happy about it nor a willing participant..

He forcefully inserted it in, deep inside of me. A scream escaped my lips, I was still very dry.. He pushed in further and then held my cheeks tight.. Forced me to stare in his eyes...

Not only am I being raped, but I'm also helping a married Man cheat on his wife..

He leaned over for a kiss, still grabbing on my cheeks. He forced his tongue deep inside of me..

## PROPHET NKA

I was standing at the window in the living room. My Mother is going to die today, I've been made known about her death. It's a natural death, no external force involved. It's her time and I couldn't deal with it. I couldn't be in the bedroom with her knowing today it's her last day..

I felt hands hugging me from behind..

Noli: Are you okay?

I exhaled..

Me: I'm fine

I turned and looked at her..



Noli: It's okay to feel some type of way, It's okay to feel. You don't have to hold it back in

Me: It is often said that when someone is sick, You can't be sad. Uyamqindezela (You making the Person more sick)

Noli: With everything that's happening, I wish I had your strength. Your reputation is tainted, Your Mother is sick but you still keeping it together

Me: Stressing won't make the situation better, I can be stressed but it won't change the fact that she's sick nor that your ex husband is tainting my image

Noli: I'm sorry.. It's all my fault

He put his hand on my cheek..

Nka: I don't ever want you to think like that

I nodded..

Nka: I am willing to go all the way with you, I need you to know that you also ready

Me: I'm ready

Nka: Then we'll be fine

MELISSA

I looked at python as I was feeding her. Knowing very well that a Person's soul is trapped inside made me uneasy..

I wiped my tears..

Me: Ohh God what did I get myself into?

I looked at her, Her eyes turned red..

I looked at her until I saw an image reflecting from it's eyes. I don't understand how and why I was seeing this, The eyes are small but I saw her.. I saw the woman..

I quickly ran out after tossing in the rats. I closed the door and it locked..

NESTA

He was enjoying himself. He was breathing heavily, Sweating, sucking on my nipples. Running his hands

on my thighs..

I closed my eyes and turned my head, when I opened them. Tears ran down my cheeks..

Him: Come on Nesta, a little moan here and there will make the moment worth it

I kept quiet..

Him: I can't make you scream, but I'll make you cry

He slapped me twice.. My lips trembled..

Him: That's it.. Give me sobs

He slapped me again and I couldn't hold back, I started crying...

NOLITHA

Nka went to lie down, I made his Mother a cup of tea. Rooibos with honey. I then walked over to the bedroom to give it to her..

Me: Ma

She didn't respond. I looked at her, She wasn't moving. Her chest wasn't moving. I placed it down on the dressing table..

I walked over to her..

Me: Ma??

I gently shook her, She wasn't responding..

I got up and went to Nka in the bedroom..

MELISSA

I got to the kitchen and my cousin was preparing lunch..

Cuz: Are you okay?

I collected myself..

Me: I'm fine

Cuz: Lunch is ready

Me: What have you prepared?

Cuz: A pie, then sandwiches

She's a great cook..

Mike walked in..

Mike: Something smells nice

Cuz: You are just in time for lunch

Mike: The pie

Cuz: Salami and cheese

Mike: Wow.. I can't wait to taste

Cuz: I hope it will taste as good as it looks

Mike: I'm sure it will.. I'll be in the living room

He walked away while looking at her Ass..

Cuz: Want a slice Mel?

Mel: No thank you.. I'm trying to lose weight

Cuz: Ohw well rabbits food for you then, Salad

She took the pie and went to the living room.

NOLITHA

She was gone.. She was gone, I just spoke to her not



so long ago and she was gone..

We waited for her body to be taken away, I sat with Ella in her bedroom. Nka hasn't told her..

Ella: Uncle said that the Ambulance people are coming.. Why?

Me: Well you know that Grandma is sick right?

Ella: Are they going to take her to the hospital?

Me: Something like that

Ella: She's going to be back right?

Me: I hope so

NESTA

I looked at him as he dressed up. He took his wallet, took out R200 from it and placed it on the dressing table. We use the guest room..

Him: Maybe next time I'll give you a better payment if you just participate

He fixed his pants..

Him: Fix the room before my Wife comes back

PROPHET NKA

I sat on the bed next to her body, my face buried in my hands.. Though I knew but it still didn't prevent

my heart from bleeding.

Voice: Death is never easy

I rose my head up and looked around, It was an Angel. An Angel was present in the room.

Angel: Raphael

Me: My Guardian Angel

Raphael: That is correct

Me: I don't see Angels, I feel them

Raphael: I made myself visible to you

Me: Why?

Raphael: You are gifted remember? You are heartbroken. Your bleeding heart has made your 3rd eye sensitive hence you seeing me

Me: You look nothing like I have imagined

Raphael: I know.. We get that a lot

Me: I'm trying to make sense of it all, I can't.. Nothing makes sense

Raphael: It wouldn't be God's will if it made sense

Me: Sometimes God's will breaks the heart

Raphael: Sometimes your faith gets tested in the

most painful way

Me: What now?

Raphael: A storm is coming, The pain you going through now will be twice what you will go through soon.. No matter what happens, Keep your head up

.

To be continued

47

MELISSA

We all sat around the dining table to eat Lunch.. Mike actually asked Kholo to sit with us. They were enjoying her pie, It smelled nice and I was tempted to have a piece but I already laid down my concerns for today. I can't eat pie "I'm on a diet"...

They were getting along well, Chatting and getting to know each other "Better"..

I didn't like what was happening, They getting way too comfortable for my liking. At the same time, I shouldn't be bothered. A lot is going on with my husband, a lot that is unsettling and I don't see Kholo adapting to this life.. Well, on the other hand I did. What will make her not too??

Mike: HR.. That's an interesting career path, if money is heavy why not study at a college? Apply for the financial aid student loan?

Kholo: I wanna go to varsity, Always was a dream. I'll be the first at home to go to varsity

Mike: Ambition, I like that. There's no future without one

Kholo: That's very true

Mike: It's good to see that my wife comes from a family that is this ambitious, Striving for education

Me: We try

I faked a smile...

Mike: Thank you for the lunch, The last time I had a home made dish was when I still had a maid

Kholo looked at me..

Kholo: Is it? Melissa it's very crucial to cook for your Man, Never depend on a helper when it comes to taking care of your husband it will definitely backfire

Me: Thank you.. I'll remember that next time

We continued eating..

NOLITHA

It didn't take long for her body to be taken away. Nka



was trying to keep strong but I could see it was eating him up. He was keeping it all in..

I didn't know how his family was going to react to me when they get here, I would give them space if I had somewhere to go. I have nowhere to go, I have no trusted friend nor relative I could run too..

I helped around the church ladies, they were nice but nosy at the same time. Especially since I've been popular on social media..

Nkanyezi was here, Her husband dropped her off. She rescued me by asking me to help her

Me: I'm sorry about your Mother

She was sitting on her Mother's bed, holding her Mother's pillow..

Nkanyezi: Nka tells me you had the last moments with her

Me: I made her a cup of coffee, When I came to check up on her. She wasn't responding anymore

Nkanyezi: How was she? Did she suffer?

Me: She was at her most peaceful state, smiling, speaking in that soft voice. Pressed but still trying to act strong so we don't worry. I might have known your Mother for only a short space of time, but.. She was a very wonderful woman, Kind and warm. Her smile made everything seemed okay, you'd actually forget that you were going through something

Tears streamed down from her face..

Nkanyezi: She lost her husband and her first born. As much as I still want her here but she was in a lot of pain, She.. She kept to herself a lot even when she was sick she would still be herself. Clean, Cook and do everything. For the fact that she has been bedridden it proves that the condition was now heavy on her. She needed to be set free, so she could rest because it has been bothering her for a while

Me: She died peacefully

Nkanyezi: Thank you for being around, I imagine if she was alone

Me: It's okay.. Just know that your Mother died peacefully and I'm truly sorry

Nkanyezi: My Brother is strong, but him being strong doesn't mean he doesn't feel pain. Just like Ma, He

keeps to himself a lot and that's not good. I'm married Nolitha and, I don't believe in coincidences. I believe in fate. Mom's journey of life was ending and God brought you into our lives, so that this home could continue to have the feel of a woman. I haven't known you for that long, you have your own problems but please take care of my Brother. He has a big heart, when he loves. He truly loves, don't play with him. If you feel like you don't feel that much for him, rather leave him now so he can heal on both paths. He can't heal only to be dragged back again to another dreadful pain

Me: I understand.. I also don't believe in coincidence but fate, I believe Heaven was responsible for my and everyone else to be here at this time.. I promise that I will love him, respect him and be there for him. So long he also has the same feelings

Nkanyezi: I'm sure he does, I'm sure he does

## PROPHET NKA

My Uncle and I had driven to the morgue too. Before my Brother gets inside the fridge, I have to pray for her. Have to pray that Angels should carry her soul, help her to fully transition to the other side. Pray against any evil spirit that might be inside that fridge, from a previous dead Person to not attach itself to my Mother..

The People at the morgue were understanding, Told me I'm not the first to do a ritual but the first to use nothing else but prayer..

I left my Uncle at the reception and went to the back. They opened her slot..

I closed my eyes and exhaled first..

MELISSA

Kholo was now loading dishes in the dishwasher..

Me: I know what you trying to do

She looked at me..

Kholo: I'm sorry?

Me: Whatever you trying to do with my Husband,  
stop it

She stood up straight and looked at me..

Kholo: You have to be shitting me, Who would've  
thought? Your Mother couldn't keep her mouth shut  
about how great your marriage is, The wonderful

husband that you have and yet you standing her with insecurities. The marriage is not so tight?

Me: My marriage is fine thank you very much. It's thirsty girls like you that make me sick, that poach married Men. I trust my husband but I don't trust you

Kholo: It'll take more than you throwing your weight to actually keep this Man. You don't cook for this Man, which makes me think that if you cold at the stove is it the same situation even in the bed?

I slapped her..

Me: Don't you dare speak of me nor my marriage like that. I can have you replaced anyday

Kholo: You go right ahead

Me: I'm warning you Kholo

Kholo: And I'm warned!

PROPHET NKA

After my prayer, They put her in..

Me: Thank you for allowing me to do this

Worker: You welcome Prophet

Me: God bless you

Worker: This is the very first time where this room felt less heavy. It feels lighter since you walked in.. You are truly gifted Prophet, you lit up this room. Rained it down with peace and light, from the dark



cloud around here. Dealing with dead bodies every day can be traumatic

Me: I appreciate that, If it's allowed. Everyday when you come to work, set on fire a white candle and don't put it out.. It will provide you with peace and cleanse this place from the dark aura, also. Also pray, it will help a lot..

Worker: Thank you, I needed to hear that

.

To be continued

48

NESTA

My Madam came back home after she knocked off.. The guilt, The shame in me I felt it rising from the pits of my stomach all the way to my throat choking

me.. I felt like she could see me, see underneath the pretence. She's been good to me so far, She doesn't deserve this....

Madam: Nesta

Me: Madam

I bowed a little..

Madam: How are you? How was your day? I hope the work wasn't a lot

Me: It's okay Madam

Madam: I don't want you feeling uncomfortable here, I don't want you overworking yourself. You work 4 times a week, take a break in between

Me: I know Madam.. Thank you

Madam: Your previous employer must be proud, you are one amazing helper. I've never seen such a dedicated and active helper like you

Me: I'm just doing my job

Madam: Nonsense! You not just doing your job but you help take care of my house, It's a lot of work and I truly appreciate it.. That's why I wanna give you R150 today, buy pizza for you and your girls

Me: You don't have too Madam. I'm already getting paid month end

Madam: Well I want too, and there's a few clothes that don't fit me anymore. I'll keep them for you

Me: You are kind, May God bless you

Madam: May God bless you too

NOLITHA

He was sitting outside alone, I went and sat next to him. I placed my head on his shoulder..

Me: My Mother passed on when I was young, I didn't know much back then but as I grew up.. I felt her absentia, I felt like most of the decisions I've made in my life all circle around the failure of not having a Mother, Someone to guide me. I know it's painful but you were fortunate to have had your Mother until this age. Cherish those memories

Nka: I know.. It's never easy losing a Parent no

matter what age

Me: How did it go at the morgue?

Nka: I prayed, lit a white candle

I rose my head and looked at him..

Me: Christians use candles?

Nka: I'm not Christian, I'm spiritual. A candle does no harm, it was only to brighten her way so nothing evil stands in her way on the other side. To make her soul lighter, keep it at peace so she doesn't become an angry spirit. Something I have to do until her resting day. Pray and burn a white candle

Me: She was blessed to have you as her Son

Nka: I was blessed to have her too

BISHOP MIKE

I looked at the stone, It contained the spell to summon the succubus. Evans gave it to me, It's for revenge. I have to use it once and use it precisely. I'm only getting one chance at this, I cannot blow it..

I heard a knock at the door, I was at the compound. In my office..I put the stone back in the drawer..

Me: Come in

Sister Theresa walked in..

Theresa: Sorry to disturb you Sir, You have a visitor

Me: Let him through.. I have long been waiting for him

Theresa: Yes Bishop

MELISSA

Kholo: Mel I'm leaving, retiring to the cottage. You asked me not to cook dinner

Me: Okay

Kholo: Are we going to have a problem?

Me: Even at your lowest you still find a way to be a thorn in my heart.. Why?

Kholo: Excuse Me?

Me: You've always thought highly of yourself, looked down on Me and my family just because my Mother had a lot of kids with different Men and was unemployed

Kholo: So?

Me: Here we are today, I'm better than you but you still find a way to be a thorn in my part

Kholo: I'll always be better than you, at my best and my lowest

Me: Better than me? You think you better than me? What do you have currently?



Kholo: I just think I'm better than you on general principles Melissa, for the fact that you are so threatened by Me.. It means I'm better than you and always will be

She fixed her maid uniform..

Kholo: Even in this uniform, I still look better than you.. With that being said, Good night Cuz

She left...

NESTA

I knocked off late today, Because she knocked off late.. My girls lock up and wait for me when I knock off late..

I couldn't get pizza but I got a full chicken, Chips with rolls..

They were so happy, seeing them happy makes me happy too just not at the expense of hurting another woman..

BISHOP MIKE

Me: Mr Gat..??

Him: Gatsha

Me: We'll work through the name

I extended my hand out to him..

Me: Nice to finally meet you

He gave me a handshake..

Gatsha: My sister in law passed on, I was on my way there

Me: I understand, I'm sorry I won't waste much of your time.. Please have a sit

He sat down..

Gatsha: When you contacted me, I was shocked. What could such a powerful man want with me?

Me: I understand that you were supposed to take over after your Brother died but now he's Son has taken over. Living your dream, leading the church you desperately wanted to lead

Gatsha: He had the gift, He was chosen

Me: I can give you what you want, I can destroy Nka and you will lead the church

Gatsha: Forget it, My nephew possesses a powerful gift I've tried

Me: I know and all your efforts have gone to waste

I opened the drawer and took out the envelope with R7000..

Me: An act of friendship.. I believe we can help each other

He took the envelope..

NOLITHA

I walked back into the house to see what was going on and see where I could help..

I passed the ladies from church at the lounge drinking tea and eating biscuits. As I walked to the bedroom, I heard them whispering and laughing behind my back.. Such a childish behavior from grown religious people..

Nkanyezi was sitting on the mattress, She'll move when the Aunt gets here.. She was leaning against the big pillow, staring at the wall with a mini blanket over her shoulders and a doek..

Me: Hey

She turned her head and looked at me, She gave me a weak smile..

Me: How are you holding up?

Nyezi: Tired of just sitting

Me: I know

I sat on the chair..

Nyezi: Thank you for being here

Me: You welcome

Nyezi: Let me go get a glass of water

Me: Don't worry.. I'll do it

I went to get her a glass of water, Nka was now in the kitchen with one of the ladies..

They didn't see me, She was smiling and giggling..

I cleared my throat and walked in...

Me: Just getting Nyezi a glass of water, don't mind me

Lady: We'll talk later Prophet

She was in the group that was giggling and whispering behind my back..

She went back to the ladies..

Nka: How is Nyezi holding up?

Me: I think I should go

Nka: Huh?

Me: until the funeral is done

Nka: Why?

Me: I don't feel comfortable being around here,  
Some of your relatives are coming and what will I be  
introduced as?

Nka: As my girlfriend the woman I'm bound to marry  
soon



Me: Do you think that leaves a good mark? A good impression? A girlfriend acting like a wife?

Nka: Where is all of that coming from now? Is it because I was talking to one of the ladies?

Me: I'm serious

Nka: I'm serious too

Me: I'm going

Nka: Nolitha I'm drained, My Mother passed on I don't wanna do this.. Not now!

Me: No one is asking you too

Nka: You acting childish right now

Me: Am I? Am I the one giggling with ladies who are gossiping behind my back? Church ladies who act holy but rotten to the core? Acting all holy and shit and right now you failing to think smart because you thinking with your erection!!

Nka: Hey!!!!!!

My heart skipped a bit....

Nka: That's enough!!!

I kept quiet..

One of the ladies walked in..

Lady: Is everything okay? We heard some shouting

Nka looked at me..

Nka: We are fine

I took the glass, filled it with water and then walked back to the bedroom...

I gave her the water, it spilled a little..

Me: Sorry

Nyezi: It's okay.. Thank you

Me: I have to leave

Nyezi: What? Why?

Me: I.. It's hard to explain

Nyezi: What's wrong?

Me: I'm sorry.. I have to leave

Nyezi: Talk to me.. Come sit here, talk to me.. Did something happen?

I wiped my tears..

Me: No.. I just.. I have to leave.. I'm sorry

.

To be continued

49

PROPHET NKA

I was outside having a smoke. It's been a while since I quit smoking, but I always keep a pack of cigarettes for such situations..

My Sister walked up to me..

Sis: I thought we quit smoking a long time ago, You not supposed to be smoking

Me: Not now Nkanyezi

Sis: Nolitha is packing, She's leaving

Me: She told me

Sis: Then I think you know my next question

Me: Nolitha has a mind of her own, When I thought that I've figured her out. Turns out I haven't

Sis: Biggest mistake was falling for someone who just got out of a bad relationship and marriage. Nolitha didn't get time to heal, figure herself out. Obviously your relationship with her is going to be rocky. You knew exactly what you were getting yourself into

Me: I love her Nkanyezi, I see her as my wife but I don't know sometimes her temper gets in the way

Sis: Have you guys slept together?

Me: No.. And I'm not discussing my sex life with you

Sis: Maybe she needs good sex

I laughed..

Sis: Maybe it's not that complicated, Are you allowed to have sex with her without you two being in a marital union?

Me: So long we work towards it, So long she's mine

Sis: I think she loves you too, Jealousy is a nasty way of showing affection

Me: She needs to get used to it, With everything that has happened. People will always gossip

Sis: Mom is gone, I'm married. This house needs a

woman, Ella needs a Mother figure. Now I know it's too much and an unfair responsibility on Nolitha but.. I really like her

Me: I'll go talk to her

Sis: Thank you

MELISSA

I decided to rock up and surprise my husband with lingerie tonight.. Things have been a bit messy between us lately and I cannot afford to lose this marriage. I can't.

He walked in, I was standing at the kitchen. He closed the door and turned looking at me.



Mike: Wow

Me: Good evening

Mike: Good evening to you too

I walked up to him.. I took his briefcase and placed it on the counter..

I ran my hands on his chest..

Me: I have an idea

Mike: I have an idea too

He ran his hands on my almost naked body..

Me: I was thinking that we should try out for a baby

He looked at me..

Mike: Why all of a sudden?

Me: We married

Mike: Not officially yet, plus you have school.  
Medicine is difficult and with a baby involved it's  
going to be 10 times difficult

Me: I can manage

I unbuttoned his shirt..

Mike: A baby is really not necessary now

Me: I'm your wife

I kissed him on the neck. He pushed me back..

Mike: Melissa stop! I walked through that door and I when I saw you, I thought I was going to have another intimate night with my wife but you did this for an agenda?

Me: We don't use protection anymore, I'm wondering why I haven't fallen pregnant because I'm not on contraception. I am doing this to see if I can catch, if I don't then we seek medical help for me for when that time comes. I can be able to fall pregnant

Mike: A baby is not a highest calling. You know what I loved about Nolitha? Our legacy, our riches mattered more than a baby. Keeping the church together, keeping everything afloat. A baby doesn't

hold the value of a woman, Dammit Melissa I've been very patient with you. Patient that you will snap out of this childish behavior and start thinking like an adult but you failing too. Now I wonder if I've made the right decision by being with you.. I'm starting to regret

He walked out and went upstairs...

NOLITHA

Nka walked in right when I was busy packing.. He closed the door..

Nka: In life people talk. Whether you do good or bad, People will always talk

Me: What do you want Nka?

Nka: I don't know why you mad at me, I don't know what I did. I just spoke to one of the church ladies, a harmless conversation and I didn't even know that they were gossiping about you.. So what do you want me to do? Go and call them out? Because I will

Me: Do you think I've moved on too fast?

Nka: Yes but at the same time there's no formula to when one moves on, so long you don't bleed on other people

Me: I love you and it might be more than I thought but I don't know if we moving way too fast or what

Nka: I love you too and this can work if only you want it to work, If only you help me help us work. I wouldn't lead you just to play with you, I'm old Nolitha and you old too we not doing this just to push time or are we?

Me: No I don't wanna push time

Nka: I don't wanna push time too

Me: I'm sorry about my earlier outburst, Shouldn't have spoken like that

Nka: I'm sorry I got mad too

Me: Forgiven

Nka: So it means you no longer leaving?

Me: I don't think so, Where was I even going to go?

Nka: Stubbornness doesn't pay

Me: Maybe not in this situation

He came to me, placed his hand on my cheek and kissed me..

Nka: Let's get married

Me: Huh?

Nka: Doesn't have to be something big just a small intimate thing, A small ceremony

Me: I have issues with my family for you to pay lobola

Nka: Is that supposed to stop you from being happy?

Me: No, but I'll invite them

Nka: So is that a yes?

Me: Let me see.. I was a Bishop's wife. Now I'm going to be a Prophet's wife. I guess being a Mam'Fundisi is my calling after all

Nka: A good calling I suppose

Me: A good one

He kissed me again..

MELISSA

Everything that I do he seems to shut it down and shut me down. Nothing I do for him is ever enough,



He keeps on comparing me to Nolitha every cha he gets. Now I wonder if he ever loved me from the word go of if he's using me..

I threw in the other rat and wiped my tears..

Voice: You are right Melissa, He doesn't love you. He's just keeping you as a security blanket

That freaked me out, I looked around..

Me: Who.. Who is there?

I looked at python.. Python??

Voice: Mike is a ruthless Man child

The voice came from python somehow. I don't know

how she was able to communicate. Her tongue kept on protruding every second, the mouth didn't move but the voice was heard..

Voice: Look at what he has done to me, to my Daughter.. He is a ruthless Man

Her eyes were red though..

Me: You are hallucinating Melissa

I closed my eyes..

Me: You are hallucinating

Voice: I can help you, but you need to help me first

I opened my eyes..

Me: How?

Voice: You will get me out of here so I can help you

Me: How?

Voice: I will tell you

Me: You are a snake, A snake is cunning and tricky.  
A snake is a serpent, devil to the core

Voice: I am not a snake I got trapped in the body of a  
snake, but I'm not a snake. I am a soul trapped in a  
body of a snake but I'm not a snake

Me: Stop talking to me, Don't talk to me

Voice: Melissa wait

I walked out and away....

NOLITHA

We laid in bed..

Me: Can I ask you something

Nka: Talk to me

My leg was over him..

Me: When are we going to have sex?

Nka: You done with your self cleansing, You are

clean

Me: So what's the problem?

Nka: I am a spiritual person, and sex is not just a physical bond but a spiritual one too. I can't preach what I can't practice, We will have to do the union ceremony first. Let the church know and accept you as my wife and the Mother of the church.. Then we can start our lives

Me: Okay I can't wait

Nka: I can't wait too

.

To be continued

50

NOLITHA

A FEW DAYS LATER

The funeral was nearing. It was a Thursday today and it was happening on Saturday.

Today I was at work, back to cleaning at the mall..

I hate this job, People have no regard nor respect for cleaners. They pass through even when you have placed the "Caution it's wet" sign. Not forgetting that people noticed me, took pictures. Put me on Twitter, making fun of me. "From a rich Bishop's wife to a cleaner". It hurt I don't wanna lie, but taking in what people say won't help me with anything in life. They will laugh, Mock me and I won't die.. It's life and I

have no one else to blame but myself. I made that conscious decision years ago to be married to Mike, I wasn't forced though I was young and manipulated because I didn't have anything and nowhere else to go..

I was cleaning the toilets and they were unbelievably dirty. I almost vomitted. I was on the rest room station, I'll be dispensing tissues and keeping the toilets clean throughout the day..

I sat in that small booth with the box of tissues on the table and the window open.

Some women came in and I handed her the tissue, She handed me the R2. They pay to use the toilet that's why it always has to be clean..

Pride doesn't get you anywhere, pride doesn't pay bills. Pride doesn't get you through the day, the week

and the month. I had to swallow my pride and do this so I won't be a financial burden to Nka...

## PROPHET NKA

I have noticed that my uncle doesn't favour Noli. The sly comments he makes from time to time, I don't like it. Ever since he arrived, He's been a pain in the ass. He is my Father's Brother, He never understood why he couldn't get the position and the church after my Father passed on..

I decided to talk to him as we were on our way to pay for the meat and the vegetables..

Me: Uncle

He fixed his glasses..



Me: Can we talk?

Uncle: Talk Nka

Me: I'm going to marry Nolitha, after the funeral. Well a week after

Uncle: Do you even know her family?

Me: She has problems with her family

Uncle: She has problems Nka, She was someone's wife. She jumped from that Bishop's bed to yours fast! To even move in at the house

Me: That is my house, Mom was living with me remember? We sold their house

Uncle: When your father passed on, I made a promise to him that I will take care of you. That I will make sure you become a man that he wanted you to be, the Prophet that the church wants.. Have you slept with her? Has she even had a cleansing? Have you prayed on this? I know it seems like I'm being hard on you but I just want what's best for you. I promise you that

It's the audacity of his fake love that he's portraying to me right now. I know my Uncle Gatsha deep down hold hate over the fact that he wasn't heavenly chosen and ordained for this work and that I was. I am not in the position to hate him, I hate the spirit behind him that's making this vile Person that he is and I'm fighting with it but he gives it power by allowing his heart to turn dark which becomes more challenging to me to completely help him...

Uncle: I think she's a gold digger, She only wants your money and to be a part of your fame. I don't

think she's in it with her heart. She's from a good life, she wants to keep it that way

Me: You saying you love me but your words prove others

Uncle: As an elder I am advising you, but what do I know. If you wanna continue with her, do so

I shook my head..

Uncle: By the way, I wanted to ask if I can vacate the outside room for a while

Me: Why?

Uncle: My wife is disrespectful

My Uncle got married years ago. Instead of buying a house for him and the wife, the wife suggested that they should move into her house since she was living alone to save money. He did, and when he was out of a job that's when they started having issues. That's when she started wearing the pants, Started being disrespectful and what not..

Me: So long you will respect Nolitha I'm okay with it

Uncle: So long she respects me too. I am a very cultural man, I don't even have to hold any conversation with her whilst she's still a girlfriend and this thing of hers wearing short and tight dresses is disrespectful. We mourning

Me: Her dresses are below the knee level

Uncle: They should be long

Me: I should be the one who has a problem with how my wife dresses and I don't

Uncle: I'm just saying

NOLITHA

These two girls walked in. I took two tissues.

Girl: Hi

Me: Hi.. R4

She took out R10, I gave them the tissues.. I then gave them their change..

Girl 2: I'm sorry.. Are you Nolitha? Bishop Mike Ex's wife?

I reluctantly replied..

Me: Yes

Girl 1: Hai unamanga! Thee Nolitha? Designer clothes? A G Wagon? Wow!

Girl 2: Haven't you been following the trend? I thought maybe they were lying when I saw those pictures

Girl 1: Life is cruel from riches to minding toilets.. Who would've thought

Girl 2: Expensive wigs, nails done, to this? Wow!

Girl 1: I thought it was said that you are now running

with Prophet Nka, is it not working out? Because he has money. Maybe not Bishop Mike money but to be cleaning toilet with a stable boyfriend haikhona

Girl 2: Isn't he gonna be called out for the Men of God show? I thought after his scandal his fate was being decided

Girl 1: uGirl is cursed struu, No actually it's karma. How do you have an affair? Cheat on a man of God? Hai cha isibindi girl, the liver and audicity!

Girl 2: I'm sure Nka was tripped by her being a yellow bone

I faked a smile..

Me: Will that be all?

They looked at each other and laughed..

Girl 2: Yaa neh things change

They walked in...

BISHOP MIKE

I looked at his recent Instagram post. He had uploaded a picture of himself with a long ass message about his love for Nolitha. She was smiling, looked somewhat happy. I have never seen that sincere smile even when she was still with me.. I bit my tongue..

I'm trying to destroy this woman, and here she is. She seems to be having her life together..



I took my phone and typed an Email for the channel that plays Men of God, I wanna be a part of it.

They've asked me once, and I declined but now. I wanna do it, I know Nka will forfeit and it seems like it's giving him a better pay than the Motivational speaking.

NESTA

I was surprised, but not too surprised that Madam Nolitha got a job as a cleaner. It's weird, I always see her as my madam. A wig, Makeup done, and beautiful outfit.. Nails done, A beautiful car and a beautiful life as a whole..

My current Madam didn't go to work today, she has been sick.. She walked over in her gown to the fridge, her eyes puffy and red.

She almost tripped on the mop..

Madam: Agh Nesta! The mop and the bucket don't belong here kanti unjani?

That was a first.. She has never been this rude..

Me: I'm sorry Madam, I'll move it

Madam: Now

Me: Yes

I walked over to move the bucket. She held the fridge handle for a while and placed her forehead against it..

Madam: I'm sorry

Me: Is Madam okay?

Madam: I'm hiv+ Nesta

My jaw dropped to the floor.. Figuratively so..

Madam: I'm hiv positive

I didn't know what to say..

BISHOP MIKE

I called Gatsha, Nka's Uncle..

Him: You not supposed to call, I'm with my Nephew

Me: We are working together, I'm going to call you

anytime

Him: I know but..

Me: How is it going? Did you manage to convince him to let you stay at his house?

Him: Yes

Me: Good.. Good.. That's good

Him: So what now?

Me: We initiate plan B, I'll run you through it

Him: Okay.. I have to go

He hung up..

.

To be continued

No edits

## NESTA

My heart almost stopped beating, Knowing that I am sleeping with this man even though with protection but the situation might turnout bad. What if he turns one day and doesn't want to use protection? I could get infected.

The down part of it all is that, I need the income. I have two girls who are very dependent on me, girls who expect food everyday and school fees paid..

It's difficult finding a job and I can't come out to my Madam and tell her that her husband has been sleeping with me against my will. She might take it wrong, She might ask why I have been quiet for this long. I didn't know what to do..

We sat on the couch, I made her some tea.

Me: Drink Madam

Madam: My husband has been unfaithful almost throughout our marriage, we've been married for 25 years. I know you might ask why I don't leave the honest truth is that, even with the cheating but he loves me. He treats me well and has never been abusive, it's just the cheating that we go through. I always thought that I was safe, that he was using protection but it turns out that I have been fooling myself. He didn't love me enough to protect me and as a woman who is barren, having a man who accepted me was rare. If I leave now, does it count? It's useless he has already ruined me

Me: I am so sorry, no woman deserves this

Madam: I'm going through this, I got infected just by

being a faithful wife. I never cheated at all

Me: I'm truly sorry.. This is not right

BISHOP MIKE

The producer got back to me and was happy that I finally agreed to work with them, which I know that it's going to spike up their views.

She assured me that letting Nka go was just speculations and rumours, they not letting him go. Which was good for me, it's time we go to the battle field together. I'll be going down later on to sign the contract, I'll be included on the show right away especially since Nka is taking some time off following the death of his Mother. I can't wait to see his reaction



MELISSA

I felt myself slipping into depression caused by my seemingly failing marriage..

I am not happy anymore, The marriage is not nice.. I am even missing out on classes, My marriage is taking a toll on me..

I was feeding python and she was still tormenting me..

Python: Melissa I promise you I am out just seeking revenge on a Man that has troubled me and my Daughter who is now troubling you and other young girls

Me: Shut up please.. Shut up!

Python: Open the cage and touch me, Just to show you that I mean you no harm

Me: I'm not opening the cage

Python: When Mike locked my Daughter here, She found comfort in me. I see the same fate following you, I don't want you to be scared of me. I want you to find comfort in me

I looked at her..

Python: I mean you no harm

I unclipped and slowly took off the lid..

I lowered my hand in and touched her, At that instant. I felt a warm feeling on my chest..

Me: Ohh God

It was unusual for a snake to transfer such warmth..

I put my other hand in and held her..

Python: See I mean you no harm

Tears streamed down..

Python: Take heart child, Take heart

A snake is considered cold blooded, but python felt so warm. The feeling that I was feeling inside, cannot be described..

NOLITHA

I was happy when lunchtime came, I went to our working station to eat.. After all the sly comments made my way, I couldn't even stomach the food. Yes, I shouldn't be letting people I don't know get to me but their words really got to me. It made me realize how shitty my life was now. From living it up, to humble beginnings. I don't care about the riches, I just want a peaceful life. Mike seems to be controlling my life even after we had divorced...

Our supervisor Brenda walked..

Brenda: How are you?

Me: I'm good

Brenda: How is work going?

Me: I'm settling in well so far

Brenda: I'm glad to hear that

She sat down..

Me: You look troubled, What's wrong?

Brenda: We are one woman short, Our old lady passed on

Me: The Lady that was older than us?

Brenda: Yes.. Recieved a phone call this morning from a family member

Me: That's terrible

Brenda: I know.. We have an open post, Do you know anyone who can fill in the post? It'll save me a lot of interviews

Me: Currently No I don't know anyone who needs a job, but I'll let you know when I find one

Brenda: I'll be giving you a week, After a week I'm putting the post out

Me: Yes Mam

I continued eating...

NESTA

She drank the tea, Then took some pills to help her sleep. I sat on the bed lost deep in my thoughts.. I was in a tight spot, and I didn't know what I was going to do

I heard the door opening, It can only be one Person..

I stood up.. He showed up from the kitchen.

He looked at me and smiled..

Him: Nesta

I bowed a little..

Me: Sir

Him: How are you? I didn't see you this morning

when I left

Me: I was cleaning the yard at the back

Him: How is Madam holding up?

Me: She's sleeping

He put his things on the couch and then came to me.  
He pulled me closer and tried to kiss me..

Me: I can't.. Madam is sleeping in the next room

Him: I just want a kiss

Me: She can walk out anytime



Him: She won't see, if we make it quick she won't see

Me: I'm feeling uncomfortable about this

Him: I just want a kiss Nesta, Are you enough with the extra money you getting from me?

Looking at him, and knowing very well that he infected Madam made my stomach turn.

He leaned forward and kissed me, I thought that it was just going to be a perk on the lips but he forced his tongue down my throat I felt like vomiting..

He pulled back..

Him: What's wrong with you?

Me: I don't wanna get caught, I don't wanna lose my job

Him: You not going to lose your job, I'll make sure of that

He kissed me again..

PROPHET NKA

When we got back home, My producer called..

Me: Hello?

Her: Prophet how are you doing? How is everything going?

Me: Everything is going accordingly, Saturday we will be laying her to rest

Her: Our deepest condolences again

Me: Thank you

Her: I want to give you a heads up, We are signing Bishop Mike

My heart sank..

Her: He's coming this afternoon to sign a contract he'll be joining the panel

Me: I see

Her: I hope you two will work peaceful together and

this will give viewers the chance to see that you two don't have bad blood. It's good publicity for you, especially with the scandals you've been having lately. So, I don't want any issues in the show. Anyone causing problems will be fired!

MELISSA

I placed her back in, or the part of her that I was holding. I closed the cage and looked at her..

Me: Thank you

Python: I mean you no harm, Always remember that

.

To be continued

No edits

## NOLITHA

Days passed until the day of the funeral. It was Saturday. Service started at 9am, and by 11am we left straight to the cemetery..

Nka kept it all together, I was proud of him. I was proud that he was strong throughout for his Sister, Even though I knew that deep down he was breaking..

His family was good to me, except for his Uncle who seemed not to like me... It didn't bother me though, Not every family member will like you after all..

I was tired, Juggling work and helping out at the house. Not getting enough sleep, made me to have

fatigue. I needed to rest..

MELISSA

Something weird was happening to me. Ever since my encounter with Python. I felt like my skin was sometimes turning into a snake skin on my arm. I dreamt about her frequently, She was torturing me..

I was sitting at the table eating breakfast when I looked at my arm. The skin on my arm has changed to a python skin..

Kholo walked in..

Kholo: What's wrong with your arm?

Me: You can see it too?

Kholo: See what? I'm only seeing you scratching your arm for no reason, you might bleed

Me: It's nothing, It was just itchy

Kholo: Do you need anything else?

Me: No.. I'm good thank you

Kholo: I'll be in the kitchen sorting out the dishes

Me: Okay

BISHOP MIKE

We were recording an episode, Today we were

talking about how Pastors perform fake miracles. But people to stand at the front and lie that the Pastor helped them, when it's all just lies..

Presenter: Bishop any words?

Me: Such Pastors, fake Pastors give us real Pastors a bad name. Faking miracles, buying church members to lie.. It's blasphemy, it's unspeakable and they should be called into order

Presenter: We have a guest today uMam Khanya who can attest to a certain church that she used to attend. She said the Prophet paid her R2000 to lie and said she had cancer, and he healed it. She says that test results were faked, the Doctor's report was faked

Me: All this for R2000?



Mam'Khanya: At that time I needed the money, I was going through a deep financial turmoil

Me: The 2k, for how long did it carry you?

Mam'khanya: Not far but it helped

Presenter: Why did you decide to come out about this now?

Mama'khanya: Because it's the right thing to do

Me: So what about the money you making at church from lying?

Mam'khanya: I have a job now, Then left the job

NOLITHA

By 13:00 we were back from the cemetery, They hired a catering company to cater for everyone than having people cook...

I was shocked that Nesta came, Last we spoke. She did say she was going to come.

Nesta: It was a beautiful service

Me: Beautiful indeed

Nesta: And very peaceful

Me: She was a peaceful someone

Nesta: That's true

Me: How are you? How is work going?

She put her spoon down..

Me: Thought you were enjoying

Nesta: At first years but.. Now I don't think so

Me: Why?

Nesta: The husband is sexually taking advantage of me

Me: What?

Nesta: Then pays me

Me: That is wrong

Nesta: And he's hiv positive

Me: Nesta!

Nesta: We've been using protection

Me: That doesn't matter you need to open a case against him

Nesta: They going to say why was I quiet for this long, they won't believe me. I'm just a foreigner in this country and I don't have proof. Do you think the authorities will believe a foreign woman than a South African?

Me: You know at work they looking for someone

Nesta: I won't be hired

Me: I'll talk to Brenda

Nesta: I won't hold my hopes up

Me: Where you work, It's a joke and I want you out before things get seriously messy

We continued eating..

PROPHET NKA

Today Bishop Mike had joined the panel, I would leave but I can't. The job pays good, now that Nolitha and I are exclusive. I'm going to need that money..

It's his audacity for me to decided to be in the same space with me knowing very well the Person that he is. This will be a good way to call him to order, expose him. Expose what he has been doing to the girls at the compound..

MELISSA

I decided to lie down, and I had a disturbing dream. Saw myself as a python trapped in the cage..

I woke up screaming. I looked at my arm, my skin was back to being normal..

I don't know what's happening to me, I don't know if I'm losing my mind or what because this is not normal. It's not normal at all and I had been keeping it to myself..

NOLITHA

We stood at the gate, waiting for the Uber..

Me: Thank you Nesta for your support

Nesta: You welcome Madam

Me: Monday I'll talk to my supervisor Brenda and we'll see

Nesta: Thank you

Me: Just pray, God will come through for you

Nesta: Yes Mam'

I waited with her until the Uber arrived. I paid.

Me: Call me when you get home

Nesta: Yes Madam

I walked back into the yard, I noticed plates where Nka's Uncle was sitting with other two Men.. I walked up to them and greeted, only the other two replied..

Me: May I please take the plates?

Man 1: Thatha Makoti (Take them)

Uncle: Don't call her that, not even lobola was paid

Man 1: It's just a general term used to address



young woman respectfully

Uncle: Don't put ideas in her head

I took the plates went to put them in the kitchen..

BISHOP MIKE

The presenter asked to have a word with me...

Me: What is it?

Presenter: You were a bit hard on the victim, We don't do that. We don't attack the victims

Me: I wasn't rude I was truthful, She helped this man fool the church

Presenter: Either way, but we don't attack the victims

Me: You are in no position to tell me that, The bosses seem to be okay so you are in no position. Stick to your job, I'll stick to mine!

.

To be continued

The bonus to follow up. Inserts on yesterday's schedule. I'm good just went to Japan yesterday it has been hectic

## NOLITHA

People left, Most family members did too. They said they had to go to work the following day. Nkanyezi was to leave sometime next week. She's married and has a baby, has a family that she needs to get back too. It'll be Me, Nka, and Ella around the house. The Uncle will be staying in the outside room. I was happy that most people left, a lot of people put a burden on your shoulders..

I was talking to Nkanyezi..

Nyezi: At least the day is over

Me: Ya at least

Nyezi: Not a lot of work left since we hired a catering company to help, paper plates helped too

Me: Too much

Nyezi: I hear Nka talking about next weekend, He's going to announce the union between you two at the church

Me: Being a leader he can't just date

Nyezi: I know.. Are you ready?

Me: The church seems not to like me, Due to my past

Nyezi: There's nothing wrong that you did. Nka respected the relationship. I assume ya'll started

after the divorce? He didn't have an affair with a married woman

Me: That's true... I wanted to contact my family but.. What are they going to think of me? I only show up in their lives when I have to get married I doubt they will want anything to do with me

Nyezi: Try.. You won't know

Me: I'll try

NESTA

I heard a knock at the door, the girls were playing outside by the door..

I didn't close the door since I wanted to keep an eye

on them. I was folding the laundry, I left it there and went to check....

It was Jef, My Madam's husband. They once drove me home, when I first started working for them before his sinister acts..

Me: Sir.. What are you doing here?

He was holding flowers..

Me: What are you doing here?

Jef: You can just call me Jef when you out of my house.. May I?

I let him in..

Me: Is everything okay with the Madam?

Jef: Everything is okay with Victoria.. These are for you

I took them..

Jef: I'm going to divorce her, I want you to be my woman. I'll get us a house she can keep hers

Me: Divorce her for what?

Jef: Our marriage was long over, and I have fallen in love with you

Me: You hiv positive

Jef: I know and I've been taking medication, Well my

wife didn't know. I thought when she found out,  
She'll leave but she stayed. Now I'm going to leave  
her, file for divorce

Me: I don't know

Jef: Think about it. You'll have a house to call your  
own, have a good life.. There's nothing I won't do for  
you

He looked around..

Jef: You'll stop living here in this dump

He took out his wallet and placed a few R100s on  
the table..

Jef: I'll come tomorrow with food so we can have



lunch

He then walked out...

NOLITHA

I was fixing Ella's bun. She had gone out to play with her cousins and messed it up..

I've always loved kids, I just got deprived of that because Mike was incapable..

Me: There I've fixed it

Ella: Thank you Aunty Noli

She's so sweet, Respectful and kind..

Me: When you play don't dirty your hair again

Ella: Yes

Me: Later on, I'll prepare a bath for you

Ella: Where is Uncle?

Me: He has gone out, he'll be back

He had driven relatives home...

Me: Go and play

Ella: Okay

Me: You not hungry are you?

Ella: Not yet

Me: Okay baby

She went out to play..

I went to check up on Nyezi, She didn't look good..

Me: Are you okay?

Nyezi: My husband wants me back at home on Monday

Me: How do you feel about that?

Nyezi: It's too soon but you know how Men are, I don't go.. My marriage will be on the rocks

Me: Understandable

Nyezi: You'll be fine right?

Me: Yes

Nyezi: When he gives you problems, call me

Me: I'll call

Nyezi: Mam'fundisi

We both laughed..

Me: Won't be my first time

Nyezi: I'm sure this time around it'll be better

Me: Yaa.. Then I'll have to quit my job, work more at the church

Nyezi: It'll always be like that

Me: I'm looking forward to it, when you love someone. You take them with what they come with

Nyezi: True

NESTA

I counted the money, It was R500.. I sat down and thought about it..

Jef does have money, He's well off. I would live comfortably, Give my Girls a good life but not at the expense of another woman's pain and tears.. The money he gives me, helps us a lot..

I looked around where we living, It was not a bad place but expensive. After paying rent, we are left with little money to carry us through....

Would it hurt to give this a chance? Is it going to be worth it?

BISHOP MIKE

I got home and Kholo was busy cleaning.

Me: Kholo

Kholo: Sir

Me: Are you okay?

Kholo: I'm good

Me: Where is Melissa?

Kholo: Sleeping

Me: Did she tell you what's wrong with her?

Kholo: No she didn't, but something is definitely wrong with her

Me: This has become a dread.. Coming home is

dreadful now with how Melissa is

Kholo: I understand

Me: Thank you for being around

Kholo: Only doing my job

Me: Even so.. Thank you

Kholo: You welcome

.

To be continued

Bonus insert to follow



## NOLITHA

Following the days since the funeral, when everyone else had left. I was left with Nka, Uncle Gatsha and little Ella..

Since then Nka and I tried to keep to the deal of not being sexually active until our marital union, and due to the attraction we had with each other. We were failing dismally. I know he's a spiritual man and I know he has to try to lead by example and do things right, But we were getting married soon. I saw no point on why we shouldn't be sexually active...

Today it was raining cats and dogs, the weather was insane. It was in the early hours of the morning. Around 4am, when I felt his hand brush up my thigh all the way up..

Due to the fact that we both share the same feelings of not wanting a baby right now, and I wasn't on any contraception we were forced to use condoms until further notice..

Ella will be up at 6am so I could prepare her for school, meaning we had a lot of time..

My coochie was a bit sore, last night was the very first night we were sexual. And I'm talking about having sex with someone who still has it in him to fuck you until your legs tremble, Not an old man who constantly needed pills to help him sexually..

His hand went up to my breast, I was naked..

He gently squeezed it and kissed me on the shoulder. He lowered his hand from my breast down to my tummy and eventually went down further in between

my thighs. I rose up my leg a little to give him an easy way in.. When he made contact with my coochie, I flinched..

Nka: I'm sorry

He carried the act of sexually stimulating me down there gentle, to cause more pleasure than pain. I put my hand at the back of his neck as he kissed my neck. Leaving wet kisses whilst playing down on my clit, and rubbing the entrance of my vagina..

I moaned softly at the long anticipated sexual contact between us, we were having sex as if like we weren't gonna have sex anymore. That's how much we wanted each other..

NESTA

My relationship with Jef was beginning to be real. He spoils me, He treats the girls well and for the life of me I don't know why I was starting to catch feelings for him. We were still using condoms and I applaud him for that, for taking safety precautions in not trying to infect me deliberately..

I woke up in that raining weather to prepare the girls for school, then prepare myself for work too..

My girls are now able to carry lunchboxes that include delicious things. Cheese, Ham, and lettuce sandwiches. Snacks and juice. He also sent R1500 not so they can do their hair.. Facing his wife everyday has been a challenge, I'm having an affair with her husband I have to be fake with her all the time.. I prepared water for the girls, we all leave at 7am. I start work at 8am, by 7:30 after dropping the girls off. I catch a taxi to work...

NOLITHA

He was holding my leg a bit high up so he could be able to go in and out of me without any hassle. At first it was a bit painful with the condom, but halfway through it got better.. I felt the warmth of his breath hitting against my neck as he moaned, him moaning and enjoying the moment made me more horny. There's nothing satisfying than hearing your Man enjoy you. I tried to not moan louder, for the sake of Ella. Incase she comes knocking...

I relieved him by holding my leg so he could be rub against my coochie as he thrusted in and out, to turn me on more.. I lowered my hand and located his balls massaging them as he continued. His moans got more deeper and he fucked me harder, I couldn't hold back anymore..

Me: Ahhh... Ahhhh.. Ahhhhh!!

The pleasure surpassed the pain, I didn't want him to stop..

Me: Don't stop...

He continued fucking me..

BISHOP NKA

I woke up to the bed empty on Melissa's side. Lately she spends more time down in the basement that's what I noticed..

I looked at the time it was past 5am..

I got out of bed and went to look for her. Outside it was raining, it has been raining even yesterday..

I punched in the code and the door opened, I walked in and saw her standing there by the cage. She wasn't moving, just standing still and glancing at the cage..

Me: Mel?

She didn't respond, She didn't move..

I walked up to her and touched her on the shoulder. I slowly turned her around and she wasn't even blinking..

Me: Mel wake up

I shook her..

Me: Wake up!

She snapped out of it.. She looked around.

Me: Dammit you feel cold

Mel: What happened?

I looked at python. This has never happened before..

Me: Come on.. Let's go

I picked her up and we walked out of the basement, closing the door behind me....

NOLITHA

He fucked me throughout, I was the first one to



come and then he followed a few seconds later. Though I enjoyed our round but I was tired. I wanted to rest, and I wanted my coochie to rest too.. It needed to rest..

He pulled out and kissed me on the neck..

Nka: That was nice.. How are you feeling?

Me: Sore.. I need some rest

Nka: You get some rest, I'll wake up and prepare Ella for school

Me: That's kind of you, thank you

I am no longer working at the mall. With what they put me through there, I acted strong but deep inside

it was breaking me.

Everywhere I turn, They would mock me. Take pictures of me just to drag me on the net. Say hurtful things and what not. The world is very judgemental and cruel, They turn to forget that we also humans. We have feelings and we do hurt...

Not really sure what I'm going to do but I'll find something..

**BISHOP MIKE**

I got her in bed and looked at her. Mel knows no peace in this house anymore, The python is torturing her. Maybe I should relieve her from taking care of it every day, She has never been a sleep walker but these past few days. I've been finding her at the basement.

I should start locking the bedroom door. So she doesn't walk out of the bedroom..

PROPHET NKA

Ella is able to bath and dress herself, just needs to be checked if she's dressed properly. I yawned as I brushed her hair..

I took the ribbon....

Ella: You have to put moisturizer before you tie it, Where is Aunty Noli she does it better

Me: She's still sleeping

Ella: You not doing it right

Me: Ella I'm trying and I don't see you helping

Ella: Aunty Noli does it better

Me: Pass me the moisturizer then

She did.. I smeared it on hands..

Ella: That's too much

Me: Ya maybe Nolitha does it better

Ella: I've been telling you

Me: Maybe don't tie your hair

Ella: At school they want us to tie our hair

She has long hair..

Me: Okay fine I'll get Nolitha

I walked out of her bedroom to get Nolitha..

GATSHA (NKA'S UNCLE)

I walked out of my room as it was still raining. I poured the white powder under the carpet, then quickly went back..

Our aim is to destroy this relationship of theirs. Both Mike and I we'll benefit from this. He helps me destroy Nka so I can take over at the church, in turn I help him destroy Nolitha and Nka..

To be continued

55

NOLITHA

Nka can get Ella ready for school good, but one thing that he always struggles with is doing her hair. With my body aching and still very much sleepy, I forced myself to wake up and help her to do her hair....

Ella: Thank you

Me: You welcome sweetie

Ella: It looks more beautiful than when Uncle does it

Me: I know

She gave me a hug..

Me: Enjoy school right?

Ella: I will

Me: I love you

Ella: I love you too

I've grown fond of Ella since me and her started bonding..

Me: Let's go

She uses a transport to school, Some white woman has a transportation business.. She carries kids to school..

We walked pass at the kitchen to the door...

Ella: Goodbye Uncle

Nka: Goodbye Baby

She went and kissed him on the chick..

Nka: I love you okay

Ella: I love you too

I walked up first to the door, leaving them there still chit chatting. I unlocked and opened, It has stopped raining for a while. It was now drizzling..

Me: This rain



I peeped through, the brick pavement was wet but no water was retained..

Me: Let me go check in the passage

Nka: Nolitha don't go out

Just as I was about to step on the doorstep, on the carpet. There way that Nka ran up to me and grabbed me around my waist pulling

Me back inside..

Me: What are you doing?

Nka: Dammit when I say don't go out, Don't!!

I looked at him..

Me: What's wrong?

He put his hands on my cheek catching his breath..

Nka: Just that, We've had issues with the carpet when it's wet and raining. You can trip and fall

Me: No I'm fine

Nka: Okay.. Okay.. You guys go and use the back door

Me: Okay

He kissed me..

After the kiss I noticed Ella had covered her eyes with her hands..

Me: Gosh we about to traumatize the child.. Let's go Ella

We walked to the bedroom...

MELISSA

Me: No... No.. No..

My Skin was turning into a snake everywhere. I was sitting at the corner of the basement, Python was turning into me and I was turning into her..

Me: No!!!.. No!!!.. No!!

I felt someone shaking..

Me: Stop!! I don't want too!! I don't want too!!

I heard a distant voice calling out to me..

Me: No!!.. No!!.. No!!.. Stop

Voice: Melissa wake up.. Wake up..

Me: No.. No.. Please no..

Voice: Baby wake up

I woke up in a frantic state, It was Mike who was waking me up..

Mike: It's okay.. It's just a dream.. It's just a dream

He hugged me tight..

Mike: It's just a dream, It's okay

I was shaking very bad...

PROPHET NKA

As they went out using the other door. I opened the kitchen door and crouched. I lifted the carpet and under it, I saw small muggots. Loads of them. As I looked at them, they crawled away, Some crawling back to the owner and some dying halfway.

It's the audicity and the disrespect for me, from my Uncle to actually be doing knowing very well that I'll

catch on..

Nolitha Jumped on my back..

Noli: What are you doing?

For her to ask, It means she doesn't see them.  
Means they were created with a spiritual ritual dark tie. Had Nolitha stepped on the mat, Somehow down there she was going to start having muggots. Rotting in her coochie. They not the normal ones, these ones are blood thirsty. They were going to suck her blood, and the life out of her..

Me: Bring me the broom

She got off me and went to take the broom. I would tell her, but I don't wanna scare her off. I don't wanna make her leave in fear, I will protect her as much as I

can but she has to start protecting herself too in prayer because I won't be able to protect her everyday.. She's not supposed to be dependent on me..

I am a Prophet of God, if you working closely with the holy spirit. You don't avenge, Revenge is for God. He and he alone, revenges our enemies. We fight in prayer, we give back what's not ours but we don't revenge. Once you start doing that, you start using your gift for bad. When you do, it becomes a problem because your 3rd eye, your spiritual eye can slowly close but Uncle was pushing me.. He was dead ass pushing me. I swept them right at the door step, all of the even the dead ones..

NESTA

I walked into the lounge and madam was crying holding papers..

Me: Madam

Madam: He's filing for divorce

So he was serious?

I say down..

Madam: I tolerate, I forgive, I take him back, he infects me and then he files for divorce Nesta!!

Me: I know this is none of my business, I know that I shouldn't involve myself and I'm probably gonna say something that you might not wanna hear but.. Don't you think it's time to let go? It's obvious that you have held on for far too long. Maybe you should let go now



Madam: And do what Nesta? I've given this man everything of me. My body, my soul, my mind, my spirit and my mentality.. My whole entire being, all of me!!

Me: I'm sorry

Madam: What am I going to do now? What's going to become of me?

Me: I'm truly sorry Madam

BISHOP MIKE

I looked at her, She was sleeping peacefully after I've burnt the insense for her but our own kind....

My phone rang, It was Gatsha..

Me: Hello

Gatsha: There's muggots in my room, they now getting in the bed

Me: The deal was to put them in the door step under the carpet. You place the powder there and when it's in your room you keep the container sealed

Gatsha: I did.. He swept them my way

Me: He did?

Gatsha: Yes

Me: So he avenged

Gatsha: How do I get rid of them?

Me: Salt.. Use salt they will die

Gatsha: Good!

He hung up...

Me: He avenged

.

To be continued

56

PROPHET NKA

I knocked outside in his room.. He opened after a

long time of my knocking..

Me: Uncle

Uncle: Nkanyiso

Me: I'm going to ask you to move out

Uncle: What do you mean?

Me: I think you have overstayed your visit

Uncle: What are you talking about? I haven't even been there for that long

Me: And your partial stay has already been an inconvenience for us

Uncle: Nka

Me: You know what you did, The muggots? What's next?

His eyes widened..

Me: By the end of the day, You should be out

NOLITHA

I was driving home, where my Mother grew up. It's a family house. My Aunt, My mother's big Sister and their kids stay there..

I just want them to attend the ceremony, I want them to do right by me. I was nervous when I drove out

there, It's been a while since we last spoke. The last time we talked, it was unsettling. Mike was around and words were exchanged..

I hope they will welcome me with open arms

BISHOP MIKE

Melissa is weak, Melissa has a heart. She's definitely not the one to be by my side, but her cousin on the other side. I sense and see a lot of evil embedded in her heart. She would be perfect being by my side..

I called the Dr to come and attend to Melissa, I made sure that her cousin is present to act as a weakness. The Dr said that she was dehydrated, suffered from extreme fatigue and he prescribed some meds for her. One will help with the dehydration, the other one will help with sleep. I saw he prescribed some drops, Melissa will have to take every night..

He gave me the prescription, I asked Kholo to mind Melissa as I dashed out to the pharmacy..

NESTA

Seeing Jef throwing his wife out like that, hurt. She has been resisting to go, So he packed up her things. Threw them outside and threw her out in that cold and raining weather..

She was sitting on the wet ground crying..

Jef: I've tried to be civil with you, Thought I was going to give you the house but now you making it difficult for me

Madam: Why are you doing this to me? After everything that you have done to me? Put me

through?

Jef: Leave!! Stop being a nag, it doesn't look good on you. You have a job! You won't be totally out!

Madam: Is there someone else?

Jef: It doesn't matter, Get in the car and leave don't ever come back

Madam: I swear.. My tears won't drop on the ground for nothing

Jef: I don't care.. Leave!!

I walked out to help her, This was not right..



## BISHOP MIKE

I bought the meds, and then headed back home. When I got home, First thing I did was to poison the drops. I was going to kill her and blame the Dr. The pharmacy had made a copy of the prescription letter and let me keep my own copy..

I walked upstairs to the bedroom.. Kholo had made her something to eat, She walked out as soon as I walked in..

Me: How are you feeling?

Mel: Still tired

Me: Here are your meds, The ones that the Dr prescribed for you

Mel: Thank you, Thank you for everything

I sat down on the bed..

Me: You don't have to feed python, I'll do it

Mel: Are you sure?

Me: Yes.. She might be the reason you are sick, the trauma and everything

Mel: I appreciate it

I kissed her on the forehead..

Me: I love you

Mel: I love you too

NESTA

We put her bags in the boot....

Me: I'm sorry

Madam: It's not your fault Nesta.. I'm sorry that you have to find another job. I'm assuming you can't keep on working here, for such an evil Man

Me: Of course.. I'll resign and look for another job

Madam: That's better

Me: Where are you going to go?

Madam: For now.. My Brother's house

Me: I'm truly sorry and I'm going to miss you

Madam: I'm going to miss you too

We shared a hug..

BISHOP MIKE

Me: Come.. I wanna show you something

Kholo: What is it?

Me: You'll see

I held her hand and we walked to the basement..

Kholo: Okay.. I'm getting scared

Me: Don't worry.. I'm not a sick psycho that's going to kill you and bury you in the basement

I punched in the code, The door opened and we made our way in.. We went further down the stairs..

Her: Ohhhhhh my goodness!! Is that a??

Me: Yes

Her: You have a snake?

Me: I do

Her: Interesting! I thought it was just lies that some Pastors have snakes

Me: We do

Her: How does it work? Does it sleep with your wives?  
Wait.. Mel?

Me: That's extreme.. No it doesn't.. I actually feed it rats.. 3 times a day

Her: That's all?

Me: That's all

Kholo neared closer to the python..

I saw python coiling herself at the corner of the cage. My senses were correct. Kholo is indeed evil, I sensed the jealousy she has over her cousin. She is very evil to the would stop at nothing to hurt anyone, to get to the top..

Kholo: It's actually an amazing creature to look at

Me: You not scared?

She turned and looked at me..

Kholo: No.. I know pythons are dangerous too but they not poisonous and so long it's in the cage down here, I'm not scared

Me: Kholo I don't know but.. Would you take up the chance of being with Me? I'll do everything for you. You'll get anything so long you become mine

She looked at it..

Kholo: Anything?

Me: I need a strong woman, A powerful woman.  
Unfortunately Melissa is weak, She's a kid

Kholo: I use to follow your ex wife on Instagram, She  
was living it up

Me: You can too

She looked at me..

Kholo: What about Melissa?



Me: Don't worry about Melissa

Kholo: I drink, I like going out with friends etc

Me: Fine by me we can work around that

Kholo: Fine then.. I'll be yours

PROPHET NKA

I watched him as he loaded his things in his old Mercedes..

Uncle: This is not over, You know that right?

Me: I know

Uncle: You don't have what it takes to lead a church, I will take what's rightfully mine. What my Father left, with or without the gift and I will destroy you

Me: We shall see Uncle.. We shall see

.

To be continued

57

NOLITHA

I finally arrived at home. There were small changes here and there. The house had been extended a bit, Just 60% different from the last time I saw it. The last time I was here, Many many years ago..

I didn't know what awaited me, but whatever it is. I'm hoping I'll leave here with Peace established from my side and them..

When I walked all the way to the front, My cousin was doing laundry. My Aunt's first born..

Me: Nkululeko

She stopped and looked at me..

Nku: Nolitha?

Me: Hey cuz

Nku: Ohh Nkosi yam' I knew this day was going to come

She wiped her hands and made her way to me..

Nku: Look at you, You a grown ass woman now! The last time I saw you. You were younger

She hugged me..

Nku: Wooooow.. It's so good to see you

Me: It's good to see you too

I wiped my tears..

Nku: Wow Noli.. God is good

Me: Indeed

Nku: Come.. Mom is in the house

NESTA

Jef: I did promise you a house didn't I? A better life?

Me: It would've been better if it wasn't followed by another woman's tears

Jef: That's not how life works Nesta. These things happen. My marriage was over a long time ago, You had nothing to do with it

Me: I don't want to leave one day in a raining weather, My things being thrown out

Jef: That will never happen to you, I love you and I will treat you right. I promise

MELISSA

I coughed again and looked at tissue. I had coughed up blood..

It's strange how I'm just falling sick out of nowhere..

Kholo: Here

Me: It's painful when I cough

Kholo: It's okay.. Here's your medication that the Dr prescribed for you. Take these drops they'll help you sleep.. You need to rest

Me: What's happening to me?

Kholo: Dr said you dehydrated and suffer from fatigue

Me: Fatigue doesn't make people cough up blood

Kholo: Drink your medication, We'll take it from there

BISHOP MIKE

Nolitha had a journey, She was going home. I know very well that the journey won't produce any good results. There's a lot of hurt, anger, and hate that is buried in the hearts of her Mother's family. I know they consulted, I know they were told about what happened to Nolitha's Mom..

This is a good way to release the Succubus, she'll be emotionally and mentally vulnerable. She'll make a good host..

I knelt down at the alter and performed the prayer. I released the succubus. One of the strongest upper rank demons.. I sprayed her perfume on the ancient cursed rock that had the prayer on it, The prayer that will unleash the succubus..

NOLITHA



My Aunt was shocked to see me..

Me: Aunty

She looked at me..

Aunt: What are you doing here?

Nku: Ma

Aunt: You not supposed to be here, You not welcomed here

Nku: Ma.. Give her a chance

Aunt: What do you want?

Me: I've come to see how everyone is doing

Aunt: Why?

Me: It's been years Aunty, At some point we have to forgive and forget

Aunt: That man killed my Sister and sacrificed her for riches, You jumped in bed with him. You married a killer, You married your Mother's murderer.. You looked us in the eye and told us you loved him, You chose him over us

Nku: She was young Ma, and forced

Aunt: She was not forced! I offered to take her, She declined and said she wanted to be with him. Wanted to be with her Father, Jiki jiki she shows again telling us they getting married

Me: Aunty I know that I have caused you guys a lot of pain

Aunt: A lot of pain? You are sinister Nolitha, You are cruel! You think I don't know that he divorced you because you were cheating with a Prophet? Nku showed me what they said about you in the internet. From one bed to another, You are a religious hoe.. You are a Jezebel.. I know he announced that he wants to marry you and you here trying to ask for blessings. You not here to see us, you here for your selfish reasons tell the truth!

Me: Aunty

Aunt: You won't make it with this wedding

She spat on the floor..

Aunt: I curse you, I curse you to suffer the pain you've put us through.. Now get out!

Nku: Ma

Aunt: So long my sister is trapped in that snake, You won't see happiness too.. Leave!

NESTA

He hired a van to go take our things from where we residing. I am looking forward to this, Yes it's evil. Yes it's all that but Maybe it might just work, Maybe this is my chance at knowing happiness..

We arrived first at my place, We waited for the truck..

Jef: Here is a copy of your own keys

Me: Thank you

Jef: The girls will even have their own bedroom, I'm sure they'll be happy

Me: They will be.. They've never had a present father figure

Jef: With my wife not being able to have kids.. I've always wanted kids but didn't wanna say it, Didn't wanna make her feel uncomfortable and hurt her. Now with my state of sickness, I don't think I wanna have kids and you came along. Gave me a chance to be a Father. I'll love your girls like they are my own, I've always wanted girls. Love and protect them from this sinister world.. I'll do right by them and by you, I promise

Me: And People say God doesn't exist

He took my hand and kissed it

Me: I love you

Jef: I love you too

NOLITHA

Nku walked me to my car, Tears were streaming down..

Nku: Noli I'm sorry

Me: It's not your fault

Nku: I should have never told her about your wife when I saw you trend on Twitter

Me: It's okay.. She's your Mother and I understand

Nku: I'll talk to her

Me: No.. I don't think she'll change her mind, She's that mad

Nku: Have a safe trip back home

Me: Thank you

We hugged, And I bid her farewell..

I got in the car and strapped myself. I leaned against the wheel and started crying..

I didn't know that Mike had done that to my Mother, I didn't know until now..

Ever since my divorce, I have known no peace..

As I was busy crying I felt this cold breeze in the car. This unsettling aura. I then saw my dress being lifted up, As far as I know I was alone in the car.. The force went up to squeezing my breath and then eventually I felt the grip on my neck. My heart was racing now. I couldn't move, I kept still to the chair.

I felt pressure on my tummy, an intense amount of pressure that was almost stopping me from breathing. I felt a sharp pain right in my belly button. I tried to scream but my throat raised no voice..

I don't know what was happening, but whatever it was.. It was frightening..



58

PROPHET NKA

Angel Raphael showed up announced in my office....

Me: Dammit! Have you guys ever heard of doors?  
Knocking?

He turned back and looked at the door then looked  
at me..

Me: Never mind

Raph: You seem somewhat upset and in distress

Me: This thing with my Uncle is messing me up, I  
don't understand why family has to be our Foes

Raph: Envy, Jealousy, and greed plays a vital role in people's hearts nowadays. The devil uses those who are dear to our hearts because he knows the pain will be more than if a stranger would

Me: Why can't strangers do this?

Raph: Because it's almost impossible for a person who doesn't know you to be your downfall. It needs someone close to you, Someone you trust it's easier that way and it hurts much. Hence why you should never put your trust in Men. Love them, pray for them but also keep them at an arm's length. Human beings are all capable of evil, It's a

Personal choice to act on that evil or not. Abel and Cain for example

Me: I know

Raph: It's easy to hate your Uncle but don't. It's not him you fighting with, It's the spirit behind him that you should fight. Your Uncle remains your Uncle, but the spirit behind him is the one that leads him to do such. The Bible says "For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms". Ephesians 6:12...

It's important to not fight in flesh, but in spirit. Once you fight in flesh, you lose. You always take your fights spiritually not physically

Me: Thank you Raphael think you have given me something to preach about

Raph: You are welcome

Me: It was a joke.. Anyway what brings you into my humble corner?

Raph: Nolitha has been through a lot, and sometimes with human beings there more you encounter problems, challenges, and heartache along the way. You tend to lose all faith in God. When life has shown you that side, it's hard to come back

Me: I know

Raph: The dark hour is upon us and it'll need you to be strong emotionally and spiritually because the going is only getting tougher. It has just begun

Me: What do you mean?

Raph: The dark hour is upon us

He has never been direct in his statements, His

mode of communication leaves you more confused..

NOLITHA

I was woken up by a knock at my window. I lifted my head up from the wheel, It was Nku. The short sleeve of my dress was down to my arm, My left breast had popped out of my bra. My dress on my thighs was lifted up a bit. I fixed myself and lowered the window..

Me: Hi

Nku: I saw your car still parked I was worried

I felt very light headed too..

Nku: Are you okay? You seem like you just got

sexually violated

I checked myself in the mirror. Indeed my wig was a mess, my lipstick had ran all over up to my cheek..

Nku: This is indeed a dangerous neighborhood  
Nolitha, Should I call someone for you?

My panties were soaking wet but I didn't feel any signs of being penetrated down there.

Me: I'm fine.. I should go

Nku: Noli wait

Me: Bye

I rolled up the window and started the car..

NESTA

I was fixing the bedroom for the girls..

Jef: Maybe we should have a twin bed

Me: That's unnecessary, The bed is fine

Jef: They will be more happy with separate beds

Me: You already doing the most for us, This is more than enough

Jef: I want to make you guys feel at home, I know you worried about Madam and everything. I know you have doubts but I really wanna show you that I love you, and that I want this to work. When my

divorce is finalized, We can work on getting married so you can get a permanent citizenship

Me: Are you serious?

Jef: I don't know maybe also work in one of my companies, Have a real good job?

Me: Ohhh my God!

Jef: I will show you that I love you, and I will show you that this is going to work

Maybe I should just lay back on my worries and embrace this moment. God seems to be coming through for me..

NOLITHA



This whole situation was a mess. I need to get home and bath, What explanation do I give my soon to be husband? Showing up at home in this state when I don't even know what happened?

Worse I felt very horny. I don't remember anything, All I remember was getting into my car. Crying and everything else is foggy...

MELISSA

I was in the bathroom vomiting out blood. I flushed and sat down, with my head leaning over the toilet. I felt like my insides were being shredded. Like I'm going to end up vomiting my guts out..

Me: Ohh Lord help me.. Please help me (crying)

I couldn't even stand up, This sudden sickness was alarming. I couldn't even hold back my urine, I passed out urine..

Me: God help me.. Please help me (crying)

I heard Kholo's voice..

Kholo: Melissa!!

Me: I need to go to the hospital, Kholo I need to go to the hospital

Kholo: Come.. I'll clean you up

Me: Please.. I need the hospital.. I need to go to the hospital

Kholo: Come

She helped me up..

My knees were wobbly..

She put my arm over her shoulders and dragged me out of the bathroom..

.

To be continued

Side note:

It's going to get unbearably uncomfortable, If you faint hearted you can bid us farewell now

## NOLITHA

When I got home, First thing I did was to take a bath. I scrubbed myself using the scrub..

I felt some type of way, and it ate me up that I didn't know what was happening to me. My heart was heavy too, I felt some type of way. I am losing myself, I am losing my sanity? How do I not know if I have been sexually violated? There's no shred of evidence in me that indicates any sign of sexual violation..

I scrubbed myself until my skin turned red, Until it burned. I could clean the physical part of me but not the guilt part of it..

KHOLO

I know myself to be cold hearted, Seeing my Cousin laying there sick like a dog stung deep inside. I know we have our issues but this, no human being would take watching Mel in this state. She was weak, her eyes were wandering around in dizziness. Breathing was even difficult, her gums were also bleeding. They could be bleeding for real or it could be the blood she's been vomiting. She lifted up her arm, and it fell back on the bed. She was done, she was in pain..

Me: I think we need to take her to the hospital

Mike: It's that statement that makes me think that you might not be good enough for the offer

Me: Either way she seems like she's not going to make it

Mike: So going to the hospital, what difference will it make?

Me: I just don't want us to be implicated

Mike: As far as our story goes, The meds that the Dr gave her caused all of this

Me: Mike

Mike: Kholo I signed a contract with the dark world, There's things one must do that goes against who they are and what they believe in. Melissa was already a liability, Weak and childish. Unfortunately she knew a lot and I couldn't let her go

Me: But..

Mike: Just take care of her, Make her passing a bit easier. It won't be long now

NOLITHA

When I got out, I went to the bedroom to dress up. Put on a much comfortable indoor outfit. What was going on in between my legs was making it difficult for me to ignore, I thought by now the horny feeling would've gone but it wasn't.. It was there and it was intense..

I sat on the bed and closed my eyes. With everything in me that goes against masturbating, I couldn't hold myself back. I cannot ignore what was happening any longer. The more I tried to ignore, the more the feeling got intense..

I laid back on the bed and opened my legs wide, I ran

my hand from my stomach all the way down to my coochie. When I got there, when I touched down there.. I felt a rush, my body froze and the more I dug my two fingers in deeply the more the pleasure intensified...

NESTA

My eldest daughter's name is Tiara but I usually call her Titi, whilst my last born is Diana.. We call her Dee..

They were so In love with their new room, the whole entire house for that matter. I've never seen them this excited about anything. They were busy jumping on the bed..

Jef walked in, He seemed upset..



Me: Girls come on, you'll break the bed

They stopped..

I walked up to Jef..

Me: What's wrong?

Jef: I'm upset about something, I even feel like catching a murder case

Me: What's wrong?

Jef: This guy I know raped a child. Who does that? What kind of a sick man gets sexually attracted to a child? What demons do you have? Even saying he's sick is an excuse, he's not sick.. He's a monster! I feel conflictrd deep within, I just wanna murder him!!

Me: That's heavy.. I don't understand Men who do that, How do you get sexually attracted to a child?

Jef: I'm asking myself

He looked at the girls..

Jef: I would kill anyone who would hurt the girls in that manner.. Should teach them how to speak up when such happens

Me: We should because it's not on

KHOLLO

I wiped her, to change her damp pj's since she urinated on herself..

She wasn't responsive but she was conscious. This was even taking too long, She's suffering. Death should come sooner.

I wiped her butt with the face cloth that had soap in it, and then wiped her dry again.

I took the Vaseline instead of lotion to smear it on her butt incase there's itchiness..

I then went to take out a clean underwear and Pj's to dress up..

NOLITHA

I finger fucked myself so much and so hard that I heard the sound that my fingers made down there, I was very horny. Extremely horny.. I moaned and

couldn't keep still..

Me: Ohhhhhh my word!!! Ohh my word!!

My body still tensed up, electrical impulses surging throughout my body.. I felt my juices dripping from my coochie down to my ass.

I took my fingers out and shot through squirting, I went back to finger fuck myself. My eyes rolling at the back of my head too. It was nice, it was too nice but also torturous. This level of being horny was torture, my clit throbbing my coochie just yearning for more action..

PROPHET NKA

Me: Whatever happens, Don't lose your faith in God. May God bless you for watching..

Stocks indicated cut..

Stocks: That was beautiful, I got goosebumps. Felt the holy spirit in our mist

I took my phone and called Noli..

Stocks: Let me upload it

She didn't pick up..

I put my phone down and it rang, I picked thinking it was her but it was Ella's teacher..

Me: Good day

Her: Mr Mhlaba

Me: Is everything okay?

Her: A miss Noli was supposed to fetch Ella from school right?

Me: Yes that's correct. Her transport, the car was said to have broken down after dropping off the kids

Her: Well she's not here, I tried calling but she didn't pick up.. Ella is the only child left

I exhaled..

Me: I'll be right there, I'm sorry for the inconvenience

Her: See you then

She hung up..

Me: Stocks we done right?

Stocks: For today yes

Me: Okay.. See you tomorrow

Stocks: Tomorrow it is

.

To be continued

60

NOLITHA

After that intense session, I had to bath again.. I felt

a bit exhausted after..

Nka and Ella walked in, I even forgot to pick up Ella from school. With how my day went, It slipped my mind..

Ella ran up to me and hugged me..

Ella: Aunty Noli

Me: Hi baby.. How was school?

Ella: School was good

Me: That's good.. I'm happy you enjoyed

Nka: Go change baby



Ella: Okay

She ran to her bedroom. I looked at Nka..

Me: I'm so sorry.. Nka I.. It totally slipped my mind

He fixed his wrist watch..

Nka: It's okay.. I'm starting to get used to it

Me: I.. I would never do that on purpose, I'm sorry.. I just didn't have a good day

Nka: How did it go with your family?

Me: It went bad.. It went very bad, I even regret going

there

Nka: I see

He wasn't even looking at me..

Me: It's okay.. We can do this on our own right? We can still go on!

Nka: I'm sure we can

I walked up to him.. I tried touching him and he stepped back..

Me: I said I was sorry

Nka: I know.. I need to pray, please give me some space

He walked away...

KHOLLO

Finally Mike agreed for us to take her to the hospital. We called the Ambulance and unfortunately before the Paramedics could get here, She took her last breath and that was it...

After I had cleaned her up and dressed her up in her clean Pj's, Her body relaxed. She relaxed and I thought she was just getting some sleep. She was still breathing and it was after we called the Ambulance that she died...

I went to the cottage, gave the professionals space to do their thing..

I got to my cottage and poured myself a glass of wine. I stood by the window and stared out at the garden, my soon to be garden. I smiled. The house is big and beautiful, Mike is rich, Popular and powerful. Not forgetting attractive for someone his age...

PROPHET NKA

I locked the door and Raphael appeared..

Me: That took you long enough

Raph: I am not meant to say much

Me: What's happening with Nolitha? I looked at her and she's not the same. She is not the same

Raph: I did mention that the dark hour is upon us

Me: Wait.. Are you telling me that she has the succubus? It possessed her?

Raph: I'm afraid so

Me: Good then I will call Clover and we can start with the exorcism

Raph: No you can't do that.. You can't drive it out it killing Nolitha. It has greatly attached itself to her, You drive it out it kills her. It will break every bone in her body that it won't be able to sustain her soul

Me: Nolitha was weak spiritually

Raph: She's more stronger than you give her credit for

Me: If so, How did the succubus possess her?

Raph: Because Nolitha is a human being and she felt pain and hurt. That made her vulnerable, she succumbed to pain too much and neglected to pray. It happens, That's why we say draw closer to God when you are in pain to avoid the enemy whispering in your ears. That's why you find other people suffering from depression. Once hurt surpasses the heart and touches the soul, It needs the one who created the soul who knows the soul to mend it. When hurt has come to that point, that's where the devil sees an opportunity to whisper all kinds of things in your ear. Plant doubt, and discouragement. You are not strong until you stand up in the most of your pain and continue limping to the finish line, you soldier on

Me: What do we do?

Raph: You fight with the succubus, you get her back. You remind her of the love that you both share, Love is strong. Love triumphs hurt, Only when Nolitha detaches herself from the succubus will she be strong to expel it from her body.. It won't be easy Nka, but you are needed to be strong. Mike is getting stronger, he's not getting powerful but strong you can't fight him at your weakest. He can't find you at your knees weak

Me: Will I ever get her back?

Raph: Yes.. Be strong in prayer and don't pray in her presence, it will anger the succubus in turn it will hurt and harm her but your prayers will sting it. It'll make it uncomfortable to keep on sustaining Nolitha's body

He disappeared..

NESTA

Mike took us out to Spur to eat. Him and Titi were walking in front of us, Dee and I followed...

He seems to be getting along with the girls, and I'm happy. There's nothing like a toxic step father..

Titi hopped on his back and we continued making our way to spur, We parked a bit far from it. So we had to walk..

Me: Titi you too old for that

Jef: Let her be a child, let her enjoy being a child

I smiled and shook my head..



NOLITHA

Nka made his way back..

Me: I wanna start preparing dinner

Nka: Need help?

Me: Uhm.. Yes why not

He nodded, Now he was able to look at me..

Nka: Remember when we first started chatting?

Me: DM?

Nka: Before I even replied to your DM, I went and checked you out. Your pictures and everything, I loved what I saw. Not only based on your looks but your smile said a lot. It reflected a wounded and yet a heart full of love just wasn't loved right.. I knew from then that I would be a fool if I don't wife you, I loved you way before I even uttered the words

I felt a warm feeling in my chest..

Me: Wow.. That was a mouthful

Nka: I will always love you and right now I need you to love me too

Me: You know I love you

Nka: I know Nolitha loves me and I know she'll fight you

Me: Pardon?

Nka: I need you to fight Nonoki

Me: What are you talking about?

He walked over and put his hand on my cheek..

Nka: I need you to fight

KHOLO

I had to make that dreadful call to my Aunty..  
Melissa's Mother..

Aunty: Kholo

I looked at myself in the mirror, faking emotions..

Me: Aunty (Sniffing)

Aunty: What's wrong? Are you okay?

Me: No.. It's.. It's Melissa

Aunty: What about Melissa?

Me: She's gone Aunty.. She's dead

(Silence)

Me: I'm sorry Aunty

Aunty: I know you dislike my Daughter but to say such?? Kholo that's low even for you

Me: She's gone Aunty.. She's gone

Aunty: This is a sick joke Kholo! You are sick! You are evil and sick!

She hung up..

I rolled my eyes..

.

To be continued

## NOLITHA

Nka has been acting weird today ever since I came back. He was uncomfortable with touching and kissing me, he wasn't himself and that made me feel offended. Very offended.. Is he no longer attracted to me? I mean he shouldn't give me that crap about waiting for a matrimony, We had sex not so long ago..

We ate dinner as if like things were normal between us for the sake of Ella, but things weren't normal. There was tension..

When dinner finished, He went and put Ella in bed..

I waited for him in the bedroom, I looked at him as

he walked in..

Nka: I'm going to take a shower

Me: Are you alright? Are we alright?

He looked at me taking off his shirt..

Nka: We good

He walked out...

JEFFERSON

Nesta busy with the dishes, Dee was sleeping. Titi was bathing, She had the door slightly open. I stood there and watched her, but making sure she wasn't seeing me..

She was standing on her feet in the bathtub, Running the facecloth on her body all the way down to her coochie, She slid it in between her legs making sure to thoroughly clean..

My throat closed up, I started feeling hot..

I put my hand on my forehead and swallowed..

She was busy singing..

Titi: What a mighty God we serve, What a mighty God we serve..

I looked at her as my dick tensed up. I grabbed it busy squeezing it, She was doing a number on me..

She bent down to rinse the face cloth. Her ass facing



the door, She is a chubby 8 year old girl. Old enough to explore her..

I grabbed on my crotch tightly looking at all that innocence..

Nesta: Titi! Titi are you finishing?

I turned and walked back to the bedroom..

NOLITHA

I took off the t-shirt I was wearing and then headed to the bathroom butt naked..

I opened the door, The water was running..

I walked in and then closed the door. I stood there

and looked at him as he showered. It turned me on..

I walked up to the shower and opened the door, He was facing the wall with water running from his head. I closed and got closer to him. I ran my hands on his back.

Nka: Nolitha not now

I kissed him on his back, and ran my hands to his front. I grabbed it, giving him no chance to debate. I massaged him, he tried to resist but he's a man and he was at a vulnerable state..

I felt his hand going up my thigh. I continued giving him a hand job until he turned around.

I didn't wanna give him a chance to say anything, nor deny me of this chance. I knelt down and started

giving him a BJ. I gave him a BJ whilst playing with his balls too. Gently squeezing them.. The water was still running down, not too hot just warm..

KHOLO

It was a long and dreadful day..

People busy coming in and going out, but by now everyone had left..

I brought him his glass of whiskey and sat ontop of him..

Mike: You played a huge role today, I'm impressed and proud

Kholo: It was time for you to get a real woman, One

that understands how things run

Mike: That's true..

Kholo: Now a funeral awaits

Mike: A funeral awaits

I leaned over and kissed him with my arms wrapped around his neck..

NOLITHA

Nka held me up against the wall, my leg against his waist. Holding it for support whilst he was deep inside of me..

It was so good, better than the times I've had sex

with Mike and also with Nka when we first did it. Not that he was bad but tonight, it was fire. I was very wet, my clit throbbing for dear life. He was paralyzed at the feel of my coochie, He went and out more harder that my leg started shaking. No make that my whole body started trembling to all the pleasure I was getting right now. My hands were around his neck, and he was really giving it to me. My pussy breathing out fire.

Nka: Fuck you wet

Me: Don't stop... Please don't stop

I went to relieve my clit from the torture by vigorously rubbing it like it was going to fall off...

NESTA

I was helping Titi put on her Pj's..

Me: Do you like Papa Jef?

Titi nodded..

Me: I'm glad because he's a part of our lives now,  
Him and Mommy are going to get married soon

Titi nodded..

Titi: I like him because he bought us a big house

Me: I know

Titi: I like the house, and I like my room

I laughed..

Me: You speaking like you had a choice

KHOLO

Mike: Our work is not done

Me: What's left?

Mike: What's left is the aftermath

Me: The after math??

Mike: All in due time.. All in due time

.

To be continued

Apologies for the delayed insert, Bonus to follow

## PROPHET NKA

I have never felt this much disgusted, Guilty and filthy at the same time in my whole years of being sexual with a woman.. Knowing what Nolitha is going through and my human desires failing me sexually, Not forgetting that I don't want to lose her. I forced myself to give in.. The succubus is a very destructive demon, She doesn't get the sexual satisfaction she needs she will resort to getting it outside. Getting it outside will lead her to hurting a lot of innocent Men out there...

I couldn't sleep that night, I stood outside smoking a cigarette and on the phone with Clover..

Clover: Are you crazy? Do you know what you have done?



Me: If I didn't do it, She was going to resort to getting it outside

Clover: I don't care! You seriously love this woman so much you would sacrifice who you are? What you are?

Me: Fuck who I am! I am a human being before a Prophet and I have never asked for anything Personal ever since I started working for the Lord! I fucken stayed single for far too long, followed all the right protocol and at last when I am meant to get my chance at happiness this happens. She comes broken with a fucken mountain of problems and I'm supposed to sit back and watch the woman I love suffer? Feel helpless but I'm a fucken Prophet!

Clover: I understand where your frustrations are coming from Nka, but you can't run away from who

you are. We all have tough responsibilities to get through, If both of you fall into the trap then who is left between the two of you to act and think rationally? If this woman is yours there's going to be a way around her situation but you can't give in

Me: I didn't choose this, I didn't choose to be a Prophet

Clover: I know.. Look buddy you need to get it together! Giving it to her, The succubus in her will suck the life out of you. You can't deliberately test God don't you always say??

Me: I know

Clover: It's fucken late, Go get some sleep!!

JEFFERSON

I turned and looked at her..

Me: Nesta?

I shook her..

Me: Nesta?

She was fast asleep. I drugged her with two sleeping pills when I made her a cup of tea before she went to bed.. I got out of bed and went to the girls room..

They were fast asleep..

I went to Titi's side and lowered the bed covers. She was wearing a night dress that was short..

Me: Titi.. Titi wake up

I gently shook her...

Me: Wake up

Titi: Uncle Jef?

Me: I have a surprise for you, Come

She rubbed her eyes and I got her out of bed, I held her hand and we walked to the guest room..

PROPHET NKA

I got in bed and she was sleeping peacefully. I looked at her as she slept, My heart broke. This woman has been through a lot and now she has a

succubus inside of her and she doesn't even know about it.. It's too much for one Person to endure.. After everything she's been through now this??

I drew myself closer and hugged her tight..

JEFFERSON

I locked the door..

Me: Come and see

I took out my phone..

Me: Look

She came closer..

Me: Do you want to have your own bed?

Titi: Yes!

I was showing her the picture I downloaded from the net of the twin beds..

Me: I will buy you everything you want. You, Dee and your Mother

She nodded..

Me: But you have to do something for me too. You and I are going to play a game, but you can't tell anyone. Not even Mom, because if you do then I'll kick you out. You Dee and your Mother, then you guys are going to have no home. Your Mother doesn't have a job you guys will sleep outside and

Uncle Jef is going to get another family

Titi: I don't want to sleep outside

Me: Then we will play the game right?

Titi: Okay

I picked her up and laid her on the bed..

Me: Don't be scared it's not going to be painful, it's going to be nice

Titi: Okay

I pulled down her underwear. She's 8 and has a few years to reach puberty. If I'm correct, her hormones should slowly be trying to kick in now because some

girls have their first period at 9..

I muffed her innocent chubby coochie..

After a few seconds she started laughing and tried to close her legs..

Titi: It's ticklish (giggling)

Me: It's nice right?

She nodded..

PROPHET NKA

I felt Noli shaking and screaming, but not too loud.. I got up and switched on the side lamp. I looked at her, She was shaking and sweating..



Noli: No.. No.. No..

Me: Noli

Noli: No.. No.. No..

I tried to touch her and she turned into the succubus.. Or rather her face. That went on for at least 10 seconds before she turned back again to her normal self. Freaked me out a little.. She then went back to sleeping soundless..

I sighed and got out of bed to go pray in the guest room...

JEFFERSON

Me: Did you enjoy?

Titi: Yes

I pulled down my boxers, I was already hard.

I pulled her to the edge of the bed..

I widened her legs..

Me: I'm not going to hurt you okay?

Titi: Okay

Me: Shhhh

I rubbed my tip at the entrance of her coochie.. I kept

on rubbing and I got more hard..

Me: Is it nice?

She shrugged her shoulders..

I didn't wanna scare her off, Gotta build trust.

I kept on rubbing myself. I forced my tip in and she flinched..

Me: Sorry

I kept on rubbing myself and gently pushed in the tip. With my other hand I used my thumb to rub her clit, just to relax her. When she had relaxed, I stopped rubbing her clit and held my dick. I gently pushed the tip in and out..

PROPHET NKA

I prayed and I felt lighter. I didn't feel like my prayer was reaching the heavens. Have you ever prayed and just felt like your prayer wasn't strong enough? It wasn't getting there? That's how I felt right now.. My prayer wasn't reaching the heavens. I didn't feel the holy spirit with me, I felt nothing at all..

JEFFERSON

I moaned softly. I was at the point of coming. She was now comfortable with the tip of my dick halfway in. She was very tight for my D\*

I pulled out and gave myself a handjob..

Me: Turn around and lie on your stomach

She did.. Her but was exposed..

Me: Titi kneel

Titi: Like a horse?

Me: Yes

She knelt on the bed, amature doggy style.

I pulled her further to the edge. I then stretched her legs a little then got closer and insert my tip again inside of her from behind. I held my dick and with my other hand I shook and squeezed her ass as I shot my load in.. I pushed in further

Titi: Awww!!

Me: Ohhhhhh goodness.. Ohh fuck .. Ohhhhhh fuck..  
Fuuuuuccck!!

.

To be continued

## PROPHET NKA

This morning we were called in to shoot. We were running out of episodes so we will be shooting every weekday for this month.. The views went down when I wasn't around dealing with my Mother's death. The producer is hoping since Mike joined us. The views will spike up, having both of us might be good for the show. We are currently the most paid because we'll be here everyday for every episode..

Producer: Before we start, I would like to inform everyone that Bishop Mike has lost his wife but still decided to continue with the show than taking a break. Our deepest condolences Bishop

They gave him handshakes, I stood there holding my water bottle and looking at him. When everyone was

done, He looked at me. The producer looked at me too, Now I was forced..

I walked up to him..

Me: My deepest

Mike: My deepest too with your Mother

He extended his hand to me. I shook it. Usually when someone is not kosher and we shake hands. I pick it up, but at this moment. I couldn't pick anything from him, I couldn't read him...

KHOLO

Melissa was going to be buried here since Mike paid lobola. She's considered his wife traditionally, so she



will be buried at their house..

Her Mother was around to sit on the mattress, To  
mourn her Daughter..

I took the cup of tea to her..

Me: Here

She took it and looked at it..

Aunt: Here's what I don't understand Kholo, You start  
working here and my Daughter dies

Me: You think I killed her?

Aunt: Not my words

Me: When your Daughter was sick, She urinated on herself. I cleaned her, She would vomit blood I cleaned. Melissa fell sick and the Dr came to check her and prescribed meds. It was after the meds she fell really and I mean really sick.. Mike has asked for an autopsy to be done so we can see what was in her system. So we can sue the Dr and potentially the pharmacy too because one is liable for your Daughter's death

Aunt: "We".. "we".. "we".. What's with this Wiwiwi? It's Mike and who? You? What does this have to do with you while you only a maid? How does this concern you?

Me: You are a cruel woman, Thank God my Mother is arriving today!

Aunt: If you think that you will get in bed with my

Daughter's husband? Think again!

NOLITHA

I was strolling at woolworths buying groceries. I was pushing my trolley from aisle to aisle checking a few things..

I bumped into this guy..

Me: I'm sorry

Him: It's okay

We looked at each other..

Him: I'm sorry for staring.. You.. You beautiful

I blushed..

Me: Thank you

Him: Are you seeing anyone? Married?

Me: No I'm not

Him: Don't play with me.. A gorgeous woman like yourself single?

Me: I swear

He took out his phone and handed it to me..

Him: How about your number? I'll take you out for

dinner sometime

I took it and put my number..

NESTA

I yawned..

I don't know why but I was feeling very sleepy. I was alone in the house.. The girls were at school, Jef was at work. Jef runs a company that deals with sugar. Not as big as Selati and hullets but he's making it..

My phone rang, it was him..

Me: Hello

Jef: I've found you a spot in my company

Me: Really?

Jef: Not something big, The cleaning department. I think you'll do good in it since you love keeping clean

Me: Woow! Of course I'm up for it

Jef: Tomorrow?

Me: Yes tomorrow.. Wow!

PROPHET NKA

We were tackling a very sensitive topic. We had a guest "Bab'Skhumba", He is a traditional healer..

Skhumba: I don't understand why Christians think ancestors are demons when Jesus himself is one. Jesus lived as a human being, Died and rose up after 3 days. He didn't rise up in a physical form. He rose up as a spirit. One that you pray unto, Use as a mode of communication to God

Mike: You cannot be worshiping and serving a creation that was created like you. How is it that when your relative dies, all of a sudden they have powers to make you rich and protect you after death?

Skhumba: We serve the only living God, Not ancestors. We acknowledge them only as our spirit guides, they see in the spiritual world now that they are spirits. They see what's going on in our lives, The witches in our lives and they try to protect us from that too. You think that if God wanted to send you a message through your dreams he will send Abraham? Do you even know Abraham? No you will get a message from your Grandmother that died and is

now protecting you

Presenter: Prophet do you wanna weigh in?

Me: Before I say anything I always make it clear that I'm not religious, I'm spiritual. Religion is a man made creation that has divided us, Oppressed us, and made us turn against each other. Spirituality is your relationship with God, hence why a personal relationship with God is more important than religious practices. If religion was positive, we wouldn't have so many. We would only have one. Also religion is not the problem, The people who practice it are the ones who have a problem. They use religion to harm, they use religion to hurt. They use religion to judge, hence why Bab'Skhumba is judged. I always say if it works for you then it's okay, so long what you believe in doesn't hurt another person. You believe in ancestors it's okay, you believe in God it's okay. We all have a choice at the end, and no choice should be considered wrong just



because someone else doesn't practice it

Mike: Do you believe in ancestors Prophet is that what you saying?

Me: Yes.. I do believe that my Mother is also out there watching over me too. I believe in spiritual beings

Mike: So much to slaughter goats and chickens? Do evil rituals?

Me: Why is it that when a traditional person slaughters it's considered evil, when they burn incense it's evil? When in the old religion such practices were accepted? The burning of incense? Slaughtering animals as an offering to God?

Mike: When the new testament came, Those

practices were left in the old testament we don't practice them anymore because slaughtering a Goat for such rituals also invites evil spirits. If your spiritual guide is chained or being tormented, when you slaughter on their behalf you are inviting everything else that is torturing them

Sikhumba: We call our ancestors by names to prevent catching on evil spirits plus you can't torment a spirit, Hence why our ancestors exist because you cannot touch what is of the spirit unless rituals were done to your body then your spirit is likely to turn from good to evil.. That's where you become a shitty ancestor

Mike: What ancestor wants a cow whilst they know you were unemployed when they died. What evil family member would make your life difficult after they die but making demands

Sikhumba: Church make demands all the time.

Whilst those offerings go on to be used by Pastors. Rather I would buy that cow that goat to appease my ancestors than to give a man who will tomorrow buy a new car whilst I'm suffering. If religion is the way to go then why do the jews want nothing to do with Jesus but we were told his one of them? Why in religion hate runs deep? I agree with Prophet Nka. Spirituality is more important, Church won't earn you a sit in heaven

Presenter: A lot has been said, let's take a break and we will be back

We cut to take a break..

Mike: What are you doing?

Me: Excuse me?

Mike: You are a Prophet, You have a church. You are Godly gifted not ancestral gifted we supposed to be on the same team, not you going against me

Me: I am in nobody's team. I speak my truth without buying faces. We not teammates, we colleagues. I don't always have to agree with you! Just remember that!

.

To be continued

64

BISHOP MIKE

I knocked at her office..

Valencia: Come in

I walked in..

Val: Bishop

Me: Can we talk?

Val: Yes.. Please have a sit

I sat down..

Val: Is everything okay?

She put her phone away..

Me: Today's episode

Val: It was one of the most heated episodes we've

ever had, I'm sure the viewers will like it

Me: I am not happy with how Prophet Nka addresses situations, I thought we were on the same team

Val: Everyone is allowed to have a different opinion than your own. Prophet Nka had the right to address his own opinion same as you. No one is forced to support anyone's opinion. Having different opinions is what makes the show interesting, we trying not to be biased because even traditional people watch the show

Me: The show is "Men of God", Since when do we divert from being that and support something that is totally against what we believe in

She leaned forward and looked at me..

Val: Do you have a problem with Prophet Nka?

Me: I don't have a problem with him as a Person, I have a problem with how he addresses things. He's a Prophet of God

Val: He's a spiritual person and I'm sure his relationship with God is just fine.. If there's nothing else.. I'd like to get back to work

NOLITHA

Ella and I were baking. I was on whatsapp chatting with this guy I met earlier on, he did contact me..

Nka walked in..

Ella: Uncle!!

Nka: There she is

Ella: We are baking

Nka: I can see that, Can't wait to taste

I put my phone down....

Me: Hey

Nka: Hey

He came and kissed me...

Me: How was the recording?



Nka: It went well.. How was your day?

Me: Good.. Ohw I.. Tomorrow I'm going back to see my Aunt

Nka: Back to your Mom's place?

Me: Yes

Nka: I don't have much work tomorrow, We'll go together

Me: I would like to go alone

Nka: The last time you went alone, You were an emotional wreck.. I would like to talk to them

Me: It's a Personal endeavor that I would like to take

alone

Nka: Nono-

Me: I just wanna go alone okay? Is that too much to ask? (yelling)

Nka: Fine.. You'll go alone

He walked away..

Me: Babe

JEFFERSON

I parked waiting for them..

I parked for at least 30min, Then I saw them running towards the car. I got out..

Me: Hey

Dee: Uncle Jef!

I opened at the back..

Me: How was school?

Titi: It was nice

They got in..

Me: I'm glad you guys enjoyed. Wanna go and eat at McDonald's?

Titi: Yes please

Me: Let's go

I closed the door..

KHOLLO

I was feeding Python..

I have taken up the responsibility..

When I was done, I walked up and closed the door. It locks on its own..

My Mother was around now, At least I don't have to

face Melissa's Mother alone and her bitchy attitude..

NOLITHA

I walked to the bedroom, He was changing.

Me: I'm sorry.. I didn't mean to.. I'm sorry

Nka: I'm going out to meet up with Clover, I'll be back later

Me: Ella and I just finished baking

Nka: The cake is not going anywhere

Me: Clover can come here

Nka: I just need the fresh air.. Okay?

Me: Okay

JEFFERSON

I took them to McDonald's..

Dee: I'm going to the rest room

She walked to the rest room, We were waiting for our order..

Titi: Are we going to play our game tonight?

I looked at her..

Me: Why?

Titi: I like it, It's nice

I smiled..

Me: Go check up on your sister

Titi: Okay

She walked to check up on Dee

.

To be continued

## PROPHET NKA

Clover and I turned to a Catholic Priest. To learn more about the succubus. They have a thorough knowledge when it comes to demon possession..

Priest: A succubus is a female demon that engages in sexual intercourse with a man through their dreams. Eventually it sucks the life out of them, It is my very first time running into a succubus that has possessed a human being. It's a very rare case

Clover: How can we handle the situation?

Priest: An exorcism can be fatal for her. Her spirit has become one with the succubus. It's an upper level demon, Whatever vulnerability the succubus



sensed from her. It's feeding off her more which gives it an upper hand. You need to find that vulnerability, How was her emotional state at that instant when the succubus took over. She needs to de-attach from it so she can expell it out. Son, There's no greater emotion than love. You need to find that deep part in her heart to pull her back

Me: I.. What happens if she sleeps with someone?

Priest: If that Person is spiritually weak, They will die

Me: I have a confession

Priest: You slept with her?

I nodded.. He looked at Clover..

Me: It's okay he.. He knows

Priest: You haven't lost your gift, You can never lose your gift. God doesn't give and then takes, but.. You are blocked, When you engaged in phonication with her. You did share a part of her with the succubus. Spiritually she is unclean and that fell on you too. Your gift is always meant to be used for good, When it comes in contact with evil. There's a clash

Me: How do I get back what's mine

Priest: First she has to disconnect from the succubus, I feel you can help her more in this state because going back and forth will only block your gift. Unblock it, block it and unblock it. Although I don't condone phonication, There more you engage sexually with her the more unclean you get. When she has disconnected deliverance will be paramount and you'll also be able to get back to seeing things in the spiritual world

Clover: Can they do a cleansing?

Priest: It'll be up to them, I am not at liberty to judge nor discourage just sharing my knowledge where it's needed

Me: Thank you

Priest: Don't forget to pray, Even though you don't feel anything

Me: I won't

NOLITHA

Collins: I have read things about you from the net, I didn't know you were that Nolitha

Me: I do have a past that I'm not very much proud of, I mean don't we all? We all have things we did before that we not proud of. Mistakes that we are learning from

Collins: Word is on the street that you were also dating Prophet Nka

Me: Yes I did at some point, But not anymore

Collins: I see

Me: If you don't believe me then it's fine we can just seize whatever that was going to be a good one between us

Collins: No.. I'm sorry, I didn't mean to sound judgemental

Me: It's okay

Collins: So are we still on for tomorrow?

Me: Yes

Collins: Perfect

JEFFERSON

Nesta was passed out when we got home. I let the girls change and carry out their school work.

Knowing that the pills would fuck her up because her system are not used to them as yet, She'll be sleeping more often..

I won't have to drug her that much anymore, Since

she'll be starting work tomorrow. She has to leave before me, they carry out the cleaning first before we arrive. I'll have to go in with her though, to introduce her to the team..

Dee was busy with her homework, It's good that she's younger than Titi so she won't be asking questions like where are we disappearing too. I don't think her mind is at that level for her to notice that or pick it up.

I downloaded child phonography where a child is giving an old man a BJ so she can see practically what's being done and actually do it. We watched, it was a 3min video.. It got me hard at some point of watching..

When it was done, I had her kneel next to me on the bed. Butt naked, as my hard dick was out on display. Instructed her not to use her teeth and do it as if like she was liking ice cream from a cone or a lollipop...

She did that, but she was struggling to it all far in. It was okay because I was still getting the satisfaction.. I ran my hand on her back down to her butt. I lowered it far enough to her coochie and inserted my finger halfway in. I gently played it around inside of her, then took it up further to her anal area. Doing the same thing that I was doing in her coochie.

She stopped halfway..

Titi: Yooh I'm tired

Me: Okay let's do something else

I laid her down again. This time I came prepared, I had a lubricant so this time I can push it more further in..

It was okay, She seemed relaxed as I pushed my tip in. When I furthered in she flinched..

Me: Shhhhhh it's going to hurt but only for a while

I pushed in and she let out a scream. I covered her mouth with my strong hand and pushed in again. I didn't put it all in and I started pumping slowly. She wanted to scream, She was feeling pain this time around but I was in the moment to stop now.

As I continued I saw blood when I was pulling out, tears formed in her eyes. She couldn't cry out loud so her silent cry waved through like a hiccup..

BISHOP MIKE

I was talking to Melissa's Mother..



Her: I'm trying to search deep within how all of this happened. How my Daughter mysteriously died

Me: It's anything but mysterious

Her: Melissa was healthy and strong, Hardly got sick

Me: She had a normal sickness and when she wasn't getting better I got a Dr for her. It was after the meds she got from the Dr that she started getting sick, and I mean seriously sick. As you can see I am trying my hardest to get her justice. I believe that he might've prescribed the wrong meds for her

Her: I will try and take your word for it, for now

Me: What do you mean for now? I loved Melissa and I still do. I love her so much that I'm still going to take care of you and her siblings financially.. I am in

pain, I am mourning my wife. I don't need this kind of negativity and stress right now

Her: I apologize.. It's just that. If you were a Parent you would understand well, I do apologize again

NOLITHA

I was feeling unbelievably hot. My temperature was high, I was sweating and I was feeling very horny..

I closed the door in the bathroom and ran the cold water. I quickly took off my clothes and got in, I let the cold water run down my body..

NESTA

I slowly opened my eyes.. I still felt very drowsy. I

rose up from the pillow, my eyes were heavy and I felt light headed..

I got out of bed and walked out of the bedroom, I went to the Girls room..

Me: Dee

She looked at me..

Me: Where is Titi?

Dee: She went out with Uncle Jef

Me: Where?

Dee: They said they going out to buy food for dinner

Me: Why did you stay?

She shrugged her shoulders..

I walked out of the bedroom..

Me: Titi??

I walked to the kitchen and then outside. His car was parked outside. Something wasn't making sense about this situation...

.

To be continued

66

NOLITHA

I opened the door, It was Nka's Uncle..

Gatsha: Nolitha

Me: Hello

I let him in.. He walked in with his bag..

Gatsha: How are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Gatsha: I'm good too.. Where is Nka?

Me: He's not around, He went out.. Would you like some tea?

Gatsha: No.. Honestly I can't down anything

Me: What's wrong?

Gatsha: Since Nka kicked me out, I was staying with a friend. I overstayed my visit there

Me: That's sad

Gatsha: I literally have nowhere else to go, I'm down and out.. I just need to stay here until I get some money. I went to my house and fetched my bakkie, I'll use it to get something that will make me money

I looked at him.. He didn't look all bad, I mean I've been with an older man before and they make great lovers. Not too bad with intercourse too

Me: I understand.. You are family and I won't let him kick you out

I picked up his bag. How I picked up, I bent with my back facing him. I was wearing a short dress with no underwear..

Me: I'll go help you prepare the outside room

He kept his eyes glued on my yellow thighs..

JEFFERSON

I looked at Titi. I was still inside of her, My hand was

still covering her mouth..

Nesta: Dee I'm going to lie down again, Tell me when they get back from buying food

I looked at Titi. I slowly removed my hand from her. She wasn't loud... I think she was numb now, couldn't feel me inside of her anymore. That's the only logical explanation to this situation. I have to come quick and then make her bath so we can go get the "Food"..

NOLITHA

I looked around..

Me: At least it's not dirty



Gatsha: At least

I looked at his pants, He had a boner..

I walked up to him, my clit was throbbing really bad..

I ran my hand down to his crotch..

Gatsha: What are you doing?

Me: You think I never noticed, How you would look and sexualize my body? Busy complaining that I shouldn't wear short things making yourself a traditional man but in actual fact. You were drooling over me

I squeezed tight..

Me: I saw it all.. I noticed it all

Gatsha: Nol..

I kissed him..

Gatsha: Nka is my nephew

Me: Since when do you care about him and for him?

Gatsha: You right.. I don't

He pushed me back on the bed..

PROPHET NKA

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

Ziphora walked in..

Phora: Prophet

Me: Phora

Phora: I made you some tea

She works at the church. The church has a kitchen. Cooks for homeless people, We go out giving food, Clothes, and blankets to the homeless people.. Give groceries to members at church that can't afford to buy groceries.. She runs the kitchen..

Me: Thank you so much

Phora: I didn't know you would be here after the shooting

Me: I just came to run over the financial books and see how much we make through tithes and offerings to help more families

Phora: You are a God send do you know that? You use the money for offerings and tithes to help out. It doesn't go in your pocket

Me: I make my own money from the show and seminars to take care of myself and my loved ones. People who come to church are seeking help, Seeking for God they shouldn't be poached

Phora: That's true

Phora is a good Person, A good woman. Single, and an unemployed graduate. Hence she's keeping busy at the kitchen. She has a big heart and comes from a good family, and she's a prayer warrior. She handles the mid week morning services for unemployed people too.. Very dedicated to the work of God..

Phora: I'll be at the kitchen

Me: How is it going?

Phora: It's going good.. We are done with preparing most of the veges so tomorrow we just leave early without any hassle

Me: I will come with you guys tomorrow

Phora: Are you sure?

Me: Yes

She smiled..

Phora: We would appreciate that, Thank you

Me: You welcome

She walked out...

NOLITHA

He wrapped my legs around his waist.. I was at the edge of the bed..

He wasn't bad, better than I expected from a 57 year old man. He mentioned his age as we were doing it..

He hit my thigh..

Gatsha: You so wet!!

He kept on slipping out every now and then as he fucked me..

It was good. My body felt hoot, and I was so horny that I started trembling. Tears streamed down on the side..

I just wanted more of it..

PROPHET NKA

My phone rang. It was the landline from home..

Me: Hello

Ella: Uncle

She was crying..

Me: What's wrong?

Ella: Aunty Noli is not here, I'm alone in the house.  
I'm scared.. I miss Grandma, I want Grandma

Me: Where did she go?

Ella: I don't know.. The kitchen door is wide open.

Me: Lock the door baby and don't open for anyone.  
I'm on my way, make sure all the doors are locked  
then I'll call you again.. We will talk as I'm driving



home okay?

Ella: Okay

Me: Don't cry.. I'm on my way

Ella: Okay

Me: I love you

Ella: I love you too

I hung up..

Me: Dammit Nolitha!!!!

JEFFERSON

I checked on Nesta.. She was still sleeping. I gently closed the door..

I went to the bathroom and checked up on Titi. She was crying as she ran the face cloth in between her legs..

Titi: Awww (crying)

Me: Titi be quiet

Titi: It's painful

Me: I know but don't make noise. Unless you want to be homeless

She wiped her tears..

Me: Come on get out

She got out..

Me: Let's go so you can get dressed

Dee: Is she going to be okay? Titi are you okay?

We turned and looked at her..

Dee: Her face cloth has blood

I snatched it away from Titi..

Me: Come on.. Let's all go into the bedroom

Dee: I heard you and her in the other room she was crying, Is she hurt? We have to tell Mom. I was on the way to her bedroom to wake her up and tell her Titi is hurt

Me: Come here

This child is going to put me in a lot of trouble..

We walked back into the bedroom and I closed the door..

I grabbed her and laid her on the bed. I placed both my hands on her throat and strangled her to death..

Titi: What are you doing? You hurting her!

Me: Shut up!!

.

To be continued

No edits

67

BISHOP MIKE

I looked at her Melissa's Mother..

Me: My wife is going to be cremated

Her: What?

Me: It's an old tradition to lay the dead to rest peacefully. We are going to scatter her ashes in the ocean

Her: That is not going to happen, Traditionally it's wrong. Even in the Bible, I have never heard of anyone being burnt. Jesus Christ himself went to the grave, This is blasphemy

Me: In my culture, We do this and since I paid Lobola. Melissa is my wife I have the right. We not going to have a big funeral, The cremation will take place in two days. I don't even know why you sitting on the mattress

Her: Why are you doing this? Did you hate my Daughter that much?

I pulled Kholo and put my hand around her waist..

Me: I'm taking Kholo as a wife after all this is done

Her: What? I cannot believe this! The devil is testing me!

Me: You are allowed to be at the service when she gets cremated, or you can leave now

Kholo and I walked out of the bedroom..

JEFFERSON

Titi was so scared that she peed on herself. She was trembling in fear..

I glanced down at Dee's lifeless body. She died with tears retained in her eyes..

Me: If you don't do what I say, This will be you and your Mother. I will kill you and your Mother do you understand?

She kept quiet..

Me: Do you understand?



She nodded..

Me: Get dressed I'll be back

I picked up the bloody face cloth. Locked the bedroom and went to the bathroom to clean up..

NOLITHA

Me: Ella open this door right now!!

Gatsha walked out fixing his pants. He was shirtless..

Gatsha: What's going on?

Me: She locked the bloody door!

I was in a towel, His old towel..

The key turned and I opened..

Me: Why did you lock?

Ella: You were not around.. I was scared

Me: I was outside!! What! you don't want me in your Uncle's house?

Ella: Uncle said I should lock

I slapped her across the face, She fell..

Gatsha: Nolitha!!

Me: Don't you dare lie!! Your Uncle is not here

Ella: I'm sorry

I grabbed her leg..

Ella: I'm sorry!! (crying)

Nka: TF??

Me: You such an ungrateful child!! No wonder your Grandmother died and left you, Who would want such a disobedient child??

I felt someone pushing me off. I fell on the floor, on my stomach. He turned me around so I could lie on my back. He placed his knee on my chest..

Nka: Don't ever put your hands on my Niece!!

He punched me twice!!

Nka: Don't ever put your hands on my Niece!!

He punched me again repeatedly..

Ella: Uncle!!! (Screaming)

He kept on punching me repeatedly across the face...

JEFFERSON

I washed her facecloth thoroughly. Then I cleaned the bathtub. I put back the rubber stopper and ran

water in the bathtub..

This was not supposed to happen. Titi and I, We were supposed to have fun without anyone noticing. Without anyone getting hurt..

Me: Fuck!!!

I walked out to the bedroom and unlocked. I walked in..

She was finishing up dressing still crying..

I undressed Dee and then picked up her lifeless body and walked back to the bathroom. I placed her in the bathtub..

I am going to make it look like an accident. She's the

only one who knows that we didn't go out. So it'll seem like Titi and I were out, Nesta passed out and Dee died whilst taking a bath..

PROPHET NKA

I only got back to my senses when I heard Ella crying terribly and pulling my t-shirt.

I glanced down at Nolitha. Her face was bloody.. I fell back and sat on the floor..

Me: It's okay Sweetheart.. It's okay

I held her.. My knuckles were bloody too and aching.. I looked and my Uncle was nowhere to be found anymore..

Me: It's okay.. I'm sorry

I hugged her tight...

JEFFERSON

I went back to the bedroom..

Me: Let's go

I had my wallet and we won't take the car. Nesta probably saw the car, We'll stand at the corner of the street and call an Uber..

I stopped halfway at the kitchen and wiped her tears..

Me: You okay.. It's okay

I crouched to her level and held her hands..

Me: I love you okay? And I didn't mean to scare you

She nodded..

I kissed her on the cheek..

Me: Let's go

BISHOP MIKE

My phone vibrated. I took it out and checked. Gatsha had sent me a video on whatsapp..

Nka was punching Nolitha senseless. The little girl



was busy crying and screaming ontop of her lungs..  
Trying to get him off..

This was sweet! I smiled..

.

To be continued

68

**BISHOP MIKE**

Nka's scandal was trending faster than I had anticipated. Not that I was complaining though because this is exactly the outcome I've been anticipating. This act is hooligan for someone of his high and admired status. Imagine looking up to such a man of God, and then see this side of him. A woman beater? An abuser. Now it will be evident that Nolitha has done been in an abusive relationship with him or at least that's what the public is going to think. I wanna see how he's going

to get out of this one...

PROPHET NKA

Nolitha was in bad shape. Yes I did swing hard, but not hard enough to knock her unconscious. She wasn't waking up, but she was breathing. Though it was shallow..

I had no choice but to call the Ambulance, I also called my Sister to come and meet us at the hospital. So she could get Ella..

I wasn't going to lie about this, If the Dr calls the Police. I will give out my statement..

I told him exactly what had happened, That Nolitha attacked Ella and I attacked her out of anger..

Dr: I don't wanna write this report, But with you trending.. It's making it impossible to fake anything

Me: Don't fake anything, Report it. I did it

Dr: I watch your sermons online Prophet, and I might not know you. I have no right to speak of you when I don't know you but what I know is that.. This is not you Sir.. What I saw in that video, It's not you. If you get out of this one, I will advice you to leave this woman. It seems like your relationship with her is very toxic and it's only gonna go downhill from there. I might sound heartless by saying I don't want you to go to jail, It might seem like I'm defending GBV, But I really don't want you to go to jail

Me: Thank you but I did it, I did it and if it comes to me going to jail.. I will.. So what now?

Dr: I'm not reporting it, Whether I do or don't. The

internet has already deliberated. They tagging SAPS and Bheki Cele so your fate has been judged already with my hand not involved.. This reminds me of what Jesus went through. They witnessed him performing miracles, Healing the sick, and feeding the hungry. Same people who saw his great works, Are the same people who had him crucified. Same people who witnessed you doing great things, Are the same people who are crucifying you now

Me: If there's nothing more, I'd like to go back home.. My Niece has been through a lot today

Dr: Of course.. If there's anything I'll contact you

Me: Thank you

NESTA

I took her out of the bathtub, She wasn't moving. Her clothes were on the floor..

How does Dee get back from school and decide to take a bath? Right when I went to bed? I spoke to her. She was sitting on her bed busy with her homework. How did it get to her taking a bath? Did she think it was late and decided to take a bath since I was sleeping? Have I neglected my Daughter to death?

I put her on her floor and started doing a mouth to mouth.. She wasn't waking up..

Me: Dee come on.. Dee wake up, Wake up baby wake up!!! Wake up!!

ZIPHORA (CHURCH MEMBER)

I have a huge crush on Prophet Nka. Always have

from since when my family and I joined his church,  
by then his father was still leading the church up  
until now when Nka took over..

I went as far as always creating fantasies in my head,  
Which made me to fall more for him..

I did not fall for him solely because he's a Prophet,  
But because my life is settled. I'm not one of those  
girls who go out drinking and what not, hence I feel I  
can make a good wife for him..

My heart sank when I saw that video trending.  
Honestly speaking, I didn't like this Nolitha for him. I  
don't hate her but something about her is unsettling.  
How do you divorce today and tomorrow you in  
another man's bed? She comes off as a gold digger.  
Just wanted another fame and money so Nka was  
available. I even wonder how they met..

Ma: This is bad

Dad: I wonder what led him to do this, This boy grew up in front of our eyes as a church. He has always been humble and slow to become angry

Me: I am a woman and society has me and forces me to support another woman, but this one.. I just don't like her, Angimphiwanga

Ma: Me too.. I was so concerned when I learned about their relationship. She doesn't have the qualities of being uMam'fundisi. To help run the church. She doesn't have dignity and looks too glamorous for a that life

Me: I am just worried about Nka and what this is going to do to him

Dad: I know the church elders will have him step down

Me: It's going to break him, The church is his life

Dad: I don't imagine the church being led by anyone else, Other than him

Ma: Me too

JEFFERSON

I had an ample time to talk to Titi as we had gone out to get food. Plant a seed in her brain, brainwash her and tie her to secrecy with threats. She saw what I did to Dee, I'm sure that scared her..

We got in and put everything on the table, I walked



over to check up on Nesta. She was in the bathroom, She has found Dee dead in the bathtub..

She was sitting on the floor holding her, She was silently crying. Only tears streamed down without a sound.. I acted dumbfounded, I walked in..

Me: What's going on here? What happened?

She closed her eyes and tears streamed down..

Nesta: She drowned

Titi showed up..

Me: How does Dee drown with you around in the house? Now I wish I had taken her along too but she refused! If I knew she was going to die. I would've

taken her with.. How can you be so careless and stupid?

Nesta: I didn't.. I..

Me: You didn't what? Fuck Nesta where were you? Were you sleeping again?

I hit the door..

Me: Dammit!! Dammit!! Dammit!!

PROPHET NKA

Now everything was coming back. Nolitha was in a towel, My Uncle was shirtless. She wasn't around in the house.. That means she was with him, There's no way she could cruise around outside in a towel,

His towel..

This hurt more than anything in the world. There's nothing that hurts a Man, like his woman being fucked by another Man..

Not only was it hurtful but disgusting and degrading. I'll never look at her the same way ever again. My Uncle who is 57 years old? That's below the belt!!

I was driving back home, Ella had passed out in the backseat... I don't think after this, Nolitha and I we will work. We are done..

NOLITHA

I looked around..

Me: Hello??

Voice: Noli

I turned around.. I saw her, I saw my Mother..

Me: Ma??

Ma: Ohhh Nolitha

I walked up to her and hugged her..

Me: Ma

Ma: My child

Me: Wait.. Am I dead?

I broke the hug..

Ma: You not dead

She looked at me..

Ma: I'm so sorry Noli, I brought him into our lives

Me: It's okay.. You didn't know

Ma: He has ruined so many lives, Including yours

Me: He hasn't.. He led me to my soulmate, To a man that loves me more than anything

Ma: Nolitha you have messed up

Me: Messed up? What do you mean?

Ma: You won't remember, It wasn't you. It's the succubus in you

Me: The what?

Ma: He sent a succubus your way baby

Me: Ma..

Ma: When you make it out of this, You need to fight..  
You need to fight it

Me: The succubus?

Ma: Yes

Me: How do I fight what I don't know, What I can't feel?

Ma: It's your body, The temple of God no evil should reside in it.. You need to fight

.

To be continued

69

NESTA

This was a nightmare. Just when we were starting to get a grip on things, This happens. Just when our lives were starting, This happens.. The police kept on questioning me, they questioned Jeff too.

Titi walked up to me..

Me: Titi why didn't you take Dee too?

Titi: She didn't wanna go

Me: It's okay Baby come here

I hugged her..



Me: I'm sorry.. It's all my fault. I'm meant to protect you and Dee, I'm really sorry Titi that I wasn't there to protect the only sibling you have. I'm a bad Mother.. I'm sorry

NOLITHA

After a while of me waking up, The cops were already waiting to question me..

I remember bits and pieces of what happened..

Cop 1: Would you like to press charges? The video has already done most of the work for you, He will go down

Me: No

Cop 1: I don't understand, Don't you want to see him behind bars?

Me: My boyfriend is a very calm and humble Person. This is not him, Something that he would do. For him to take it this far, Means I really pissed him off

Cop 2: Mam' the law is on your side, We are on your side. There's no need to protect him, Nothing you could've done should have him put his hands on you

Me: I don't wanna press charges

They looked at the Dr..

Dr: Please Officers, My patient needs to rest

## PROPHET NKA

I was surprised but wasn't too surprised when I got home to the realization of my Uncle passing on. Nkanyezi was here, He was found dead in the room..

It was quiet clear what happened, He slept with the succubus...

Nkanyezi: I don't understand what bad luck we having in this family. First Dad, Then Mom, Now Uncle

Me: I'm just glad I wasn't here when he died, or else they were going to pin it on me

Nkanyezi: You shouldn't be glad about anything

Me: At least he won't be buried here, He's married

Nkanyezi: Nka.. He's our Uncle

Me: He slept with Nolitha okay? My own Uncle udla la ngidla khona! (He's eating where I eat)

Nkanyezi: What?? What is happening in this house?  
First Ella tells me that Nolitha slapped him now this?

Me: He can go to hell, and she can go to hell!!

NOLITHA

Dr: They said they will come back to talk to you again, That right now you not in your good thinking state

Me: I am in my good thinking state, I am not pressing charges

Dr: It's okay.. You don't have to do anything that you don't want

Me: When am I going home? I wanna go home

Dr: We will keep you overnight, Then tomorrow you can go home

Me: Thank you

JEFFERSON

Cop : Nesta.. What kind of a Mother is she?

Me: She's.. I really don't wanna badmouth my

children

Cop: A child died, under her care. It's too late now to not want to badmouth

Me: Nesta is a good Mother, She loves the girls but lately

Cop: Lately?

Me: She has been slagging, I don't know what's happening but I have been solely responsible for the kids. Taking them to school, fetching them. She doesn't cook for them anymore. As you can see, I even went to buy food for dinner because she didn't cook

Cop: I see

Me: But she loves her kids, No doubt about that

Cop: Thank you for the information

PROPHET NKA

Me: Here you go

I pulled the covers up..

Ella: Why did Aunty Noli hit me?

Me: Aunty Noli hasn't been feeling well

Ella: Is she going to do it again?

Me: No.. I won't let it happen again

Nkanyezi walked in..

Nkanyezi: Someone is here to see you

Me: Okay.. Thank you

I walked out of Ella's room. It was Ziphora standing at the kitchen, She came up to me and hugged me..

Phora: I saw the video

Me: Yaa I kinda messed up really bad

Phora: What happened? That is so unlike you

We broke the hug but my hands were still on her



waist...

Me: She hit Ella and I lost it

Phora: What?

Me: Nolitha has been having problems lately

Phora: It happens when you haven't healed from a past relationship. She had just had a divorce

Me: Maybe

I moved my hands from her waist..

Phora: So what's going to happen? Are you going to jail?

Me: I'm not sure

Phora: This is not good.. We should pray

I looked at her..

Phora: We should really pray

NOLITHA

I sat at the corner of the room. I felt it inside of me trying to take over..

Me: Leave me alone!! You don't belong to be inside of me! This is my body!!.. Leave!! I want you to leave!!!!

I felt it trying to get out from my body, But it fought back to stay in..

Me: Leave!! Leave me alone!!!

JEFFERSON

I looked at Nesta..

Me: I'm so disappointed in you, That means even when we had kids.. My kids wouldn't be safe with you?

Nesta: I'm so sorry

Me: Sorry won't bring Dee back, Who's Next? Titi?

Nesta: I don't know what happened, I just slept for a

few and

Me: I'll tell you what happened.. Your Daughter died in your care that's what happened! So shameful and disappointing!

.

To be continued

70

NOLITHA

[2 WEEKS LATER]

I was back at home. I don't even know if I should call it a home, Things aren't the same anymore. We sleep in different bedrooms, He doesn't wanna see me anymore. I feel he hates me, disgusted by me. Even when he looks at me, I can see it in his eyes..

I am well aware of my shortcomings, Things I've done whilst still under the influence of the succubus. I was alert, saw it using my body to it's advantage. I am still fighting it, but I have managed to gain a bit of control of it here and there..

My heart broke when I found out what I did to Ella,

Nka doesn't want her anywhere near me. I don't blame him, If I was in his shoes. I'd also do the same.. He is very close with one of the church girls now, Ziphora. She looks after her if Nka is not around, She comes in and out of here the way she pleases. I love Nka, and my loving him doesn't mean I should force him to be with me. After everything I've done to him, I seriously don't blame him. I've ruined his life, his career, who he is. I've ruined everything for him and I wish that he finds comfort in Phora. She seems nice, Seems like exactly what he needs...

NESTA

We laid Dee to rest a week ago. It felt like a nightmare that I was going to wake up from, but only it wasn't a nightmare. It was real, It was my life..

I got the job at the company, Jef hooked me up. I have Titi now, Another child that's depending on me

that I need to look after and protect. I cannot be sitting here and feeling sorry for myself for the rest of my life.

It was the 3 of us, 3 ladies..

They were nice to work with..

Me: If it was up to me, I wouldn't even go home. I'd sleep here

Bucie: Titi is still at it?

Me: Ever since her Sister died, She has become a bitter Person. An angry child, I even feel like she hates me

Bucie: Grief.. She's going to come around don't worry

Me: I don't know.. My house is no longer a home, It doesn't feel like home anymore

Bucie: She will be fine Sisi, Don't stop praying

Me: I won't.. I hope she snaps out of it soon

Bucie: Me too

PROPHET NKA

I was at the studio, Valencia was letting me go..

Valencia: That episode you did, Your last episode where you were disagreeing with Bishop Mike. The episode spiked up a lot of views, People loved you in this show but unfortunately since your scandal. If we



keep you, I'm going to lose my show

Me: Wouldn't have it any other way

Valencia: This is your termination contract, Thank you for saving us a lot of stress with the courts

Me: My apologies for the stress I've caused you, If I could take it back I would

Valencia: It's okay.. I understand

I signed the termination contract..

Valencia: We will pay you fully for the next 3 months, It's only fair

Me: Thank you

## JEFFERSON

The little game we were playing, It was now over. It was time for the real deal, and we have moved to the real deal so far..

I take it slowly with her just so I don't create an environment where her mother will notice. Not that she will, she's too strung up on her pain of losing Dee. She tries to stay strong but I can see it's killing her. She sleeps a lot to escape the pains of the reality.. Which works to my advantage..

## NOLITHA

I paged through again, then again until I closed the book..

Me: I can't see it!

Clover: Keep checking

Me: I don't understand.. I thought that you were an exorcist, How are you struggling to drive this thing out of me completely?

Clover: I'm not struggling, it's just dangerous

Me: I can tame it now, Doesn't that count for something?

Clover: An exorcism will only anger it

Me: I've been to church last Sunday, I'm able to pray now

Clover: Nol..

I took a few steps back with my hand on my forehead..

Clover: Hey are you okay?

He came to me and helped me sit down..

Me: I don't know.. I'm feeling a bit woozy

Clover: I'll get you a glass of water

Me: Thank you

Clover: Here

I took it..

Me: Thank you

I took a sip..

Clover: Is it the succubus?

Me: I'm not sure.. Clover when can we get this thing out? It's now making me sick

Clover: I'll think of something

JEFFERSON

Titi was sitting at the table, She has a table and a chair in her bedroom..

I walked over to her, She was drawing. The drawing wasn't pleasing..

It was a picture of a girl, not perfectly drawn and she was stabbing the black crayon in between it's legs..

I took the picture and started tearing it apart..

Me: Titi you can't draw such things, We have already spoken about this

Titi: I don't want to play the game anymore

Me: You have no choice

I looked at the time..

Me: Let's go.. Mommy will be back soon

ZIPHORA

Nka walked in..

Me: Hey

Nka: Hey

I was washing dishes..

Me: How did it go?

He walked up to me and wrapped his hands around my waist kissing me..

Nka: They let go of me

Me: We expected that

Nka: We did.. The church is also going down

Me: At least loyal members are still there

Nka: Ya.. Let me go fetch Ella

Me: Okay I'll start with dinner

He kissed me again..

Nka: I'm happy that you here

Me: Me too



JEFFERSON

Now I sleep with her in the main bedroom, Makes it easier to think about this when I'm sleeping with Nesta..

I just keep on imagining this moment with Titi. Nesta and I we still use condoms, I don't care because I get it raw with Titi..

She was tight, we still having a little problem with that and her still crying..

My plan is to get Titi away from Nesta's care once and for all..

.

To be continued

NOLITHA

At least Clover is trying to help me. At this point I don't care whether Nka and I make it, I'm not even holding my breath on that. I just want help so I can go on with my life..

I got home later on, Phora was cooking. I am a loner now in this house, So I usually stay in the bedroom and try to stay out of the way. I don't have a home, I can't be stepping on people's toes..

I greeted her..

Phora: Dinner will be ready in a few

Nka and Ella walked in. Ella ran to Ziphora and hug her..

Phora: How was school?

Ella: School was okay

Nka walked up to her and kissed her, Then he looked at me..

Nka: Nolitha

Me: Thank you Phora but I've already eaten

I was holding a book that Clover gave me..

I walked to the bedroom..

Nka: What now? We don't greet back?

I wasn't going to entertain him, I wasn't going to let him spoil my mood..

NESTA

This house didn't feel like a home anymore. A lot was happening and I was finding it hard to deal with everything..

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: I'm coming

I went to open, It was Madam..

Me: Madam

She greeted me with a slap across the face..

Madam: I should've known, I should've saw it coming. Right under my nose nogal! In my own damn house, I trusted you Nesta.. With my damn husband

Me: I didn't choose this

Madam: Ohh please..

Me: What are you doing here? You don't live here anymore.. Therefore you are not welcome in my house anymore

Madam: Your house? I'm sorry what brick did you buy? What cement did you contribute?

Me: Is that all?

Madam: Enjoy it while it lasts!

KHOLLO

I took a piece of her flesh and threw it in the cage for Python to eat. We have changed her diet, She's now being fed Melissa..

The reason why Mike opted for a cremation was to have Melissa and feed her to python.

Basically there was nobody that was cremated. We had a body viewing, but when she was meant to be cremated they took her out..

Her body had a foul smell, More especially since she was poisoned..

NOLITHA

I sat on the bed with a pad and a pen, Reading through on the succubus. Since I started praying, Going to church. I manage to tame..

Nka knocked on an already open door..

Nka: We eating dinner

Me: Thank you, I ate before leaving Clover's place

Nka: So what's happening between you two? Is he going to wake up dead?

I took off my reading glasses..

Me: If you don't trust me, Maybe then trust your friend

Nka: I don't have to trust shit!

Me: It's okay

Nka: So after he helps you, Are you two going to date?

Me: I don't wanna fight

Nka: I'm not fighting, I'm asking

Me: What is it to you? You are with Phora right?



Nka: I wonder if the succubus is really playing a number on you or you just doing this yourself now

Me: What do you want from me?

Nka: You ruined us! Sleeping with my Uncle are you serious?

Me: I'm sorry about that

Nka: Sorry?

Me: I don't know what to say, Clearly you hate me now and I am okay with that. After everything I've put you through it's okay. I didn't call this upon myself, and I am getting help so I can sort my life out and then get out of here.. Give you a breather

Nka: When is that going to happen?

Me: Clover and I we close in getting there

Nka: Clover again

Me: At least he's helping me

Nka: I tried to help you

Me: When did you try?

Nka: You never made it easy for me

Me: You put your emotions first before anything

Nka: Whatever Nolitha

Me: Okay

He walked out...

NESTA

I heard another knock again..

Me: You have to be kidding me!

I went to open.. It was Titi's Teacher..

Her: Good evening

Me: Evening

Her: May I come in?

Me: Yes

She walked in.. She looked around..

Her: Sorry to just budge in so late at night

Me: It's okay.. What can I do for you?

Her: It's about Titi

Me: What has she done?

Her: Her behavior is alarming

Me: She's been acting strange since the passing of

her sister

Her: Have you tried to get her help?

Me: She's going to pull through, Give her some time

Her: It's trauma.. You just don't pull through

Me: She will

Her: I don't know about that and now I feel forced to involve the social workers

Me: Is that necessary? Tiara is just going through a phase

Her: Please get her professional help

Me: I'll do so.. Anything else?

Her: No

Me: If you don't mind..

Her: I'll be on my way

KHOLO

It was just me and him in the house now..

Me: Python doesn't eat Melissa's flesh

Mike: She will, She's a snake

Me: If she doesn't?

Mike: She will

Me: I don't want this disappearing just because we can't tame her

He smiled..

Me: What?

Mike: Just never heard anyone say that before,  
Anyone that I was with

Me: You've been with the wrong ones now

ZIPHORA

I looked at Nka..

Me: Can I ask you something?

He looked at me..

Me: Are you still in love with her?

Nka: Why?

Me: I'm just asking

Nka: There has to be a reason

Me: I don't want to fall for you, Only for you to leave me high and dry and go back to her



Nka: That's not going to happen.. I promise you

.

To be continued

## NOLITHA

I don't know why and how I suddenly picked up this sickness. It just came out of nowhere and it's something I haven't experienced before..

The morning saw me vomiting in the toilet, I felt like shit..

I looked at myself in the mirror, my bruises were healed just dark marks left here and there. Ever since that attack, which I remembered currently left me in fear of the man I onced felt safe with. Nka has turned into this angry Person, More especially because he keeps to himself.. There's a lot he's bottling inside and it's turning him into this vicious and dark person that I can't recognize anymore..

I had taken a bath very early in the morning, Clover and I we working tirelessly on my case. I'm happy that there's at least one person who is willing to help. Who doesn't see me as an enemy or is disgusted by me..

I rinsed my mouth, Then took my bag and headed out of the bathroom. I was actually on my way out when it hit me..

He was at the kitchen making himself a smoothie, Looks like he had been jogging. Sweaty upper body, Nikey shorts and sneakers. I took a deep breath and walked in..

Me: Good morning

He looked at me..

Me: I'm going out

Nka: Wait

I stopped..

Nka: Exactly what is it that you doing with Clover that's taking this long? Obviously he can't help you with an exorcism so what's happening now? Is it a hookup

I turned and looked at him..

Me: At least he's trying to help

Nka: Bullshit Nolitha, Are you fucking him too? My own best friend

Me: No I'm not

Nka: Then what is it?

Me: Why are you abusing me? Uyang'hlukumeza!

Nka: Abusing you? What were you doing to me when you slept with my Uncle? When you hit my Niece? What was that?

Me: I cannot apologize enough for that

Nka: And I don't want your apology

Me: Okay then.. I'm leaving

Nka: Who are you sleeping with now? The succubus needs to be fed how many innocent souls are you

killing out there?

Me: No one.. Thanks to Clover I'm able to tame it

Nka: Really?

Me: Yes

He walked up to me, I took a few steps back.

Me: I really have to go

When I turned back, He grabbed my arm turning me back to face him and then pulled me to him. My heart rate started to pick up..

Me: I just wanna go

Nka: What's the rush?

He kissed me on my neck..

Me: I don't wanna do this with you Nka..

Nka: Why not? You've already ruined my life so I have nothing!

Me: Maybe work on fixing your life than seeing me as an enemy

Nka: What better way to talk to someone who is actually causing me all these problems

He kissed me again..

Me: Stop

Nka: What's the matter? You already slept with my Uncle.. What? You too good for me now to open your legs for me?

Me: This is not you!

Nka: I don't care!! You've hurt me Nolitha, You've turned me into what I am right now. You getting exactly what you've created

He tore my blouse..

Me: Nka stop!! Stop it!!

I tried to push him off but that only angered him to the point where he slapped me twice.



Nka: This is how you want me to treat you right?  
Because when I'm nice clearly I'm a fool

He swings hard, The second slap left me with a  
ringing sound in my ear..

He grabbed my arm again..

Me: Baby stop you hurting me

Nka: You made me hook up with someone that I  
don't even love! Just so I can get you out of my  
system

Me: Okay stop.. Let's talk about this without violence,  
You can swear at me all you want but please don't  
hit me

Nka: You are not going to see Clover again, You and I we are going to talk it out whilst I'm inside of you!

He dragged me back to the bedroom..

NESTA

I was making Titi's bed as she bathe and prepared for school. The bed was wet. I moved the sheet, the mattress had a urine mark..

Me: You got to be kidding me!!

I went to the bathroom..

Me: Titi!!

She looked at me..

Me: Since when do you wet the bed?

Titi: I'm sorry Mama

Me: The bathroom is close by, If you feel like peeing why don't you wake up and go to the toilet

She started crying..

Me: Why are you crying now?

Titi: I'm sorry

I took her wet facecloth and started whooping her

with it..

Titi: I'm sorry.. I'm sorry (crying)

Me: You see they trying to take you away from me and you helping them!!

Titi: I'm sorry I won't wet the bed again (Crying)

I threw the face cloth at her..

Me: Finish up!!!

NOLITHA

He was sucking on my breast the most painful way..

Me: Ahhhhh!!!

Nka: You making noise

Me: But you hurting me

We were in the bathroom, Door locked and I was sitting ontop of the counter next to the basin...

Nka: You not even supposed to feel pain you are a succubus

He got in between my legs. He picked them up and placed them on the counter..

He grabbed his dick, and pushed it in..

I pushed him back a little..

He looked at me..

Nka: Should we try it at the back? Because I'm four five seconds to doing that

Me: No I'm sorry

He pushed in again, I wasn't even that wet..

Me: Ahhhhh..

Nka: It's fucked up that I enjoy you more now since you have the succubus in you

I just wanted it to be over already..

I put my hands on the counter for balance because he was really banging me, and he was hard too..

Me: Baby I'm sorry (Crying)

Nka: I just wanna enjoy you okay?

Me: But not this hard.. Please, it's really painful

Nka: I don't care!!!! Were you saying the same thing when my Uncle fucked you?

Me: Nka please (Crying)

Nka: Did you even enjoy him? Did you scream his name? Did he come inside of you?

I didn't wanna answer anymore of his questions,

because it's just going to anger him more and he'll hurt me more..

He slapped me again..

Me: I don't know what to say because you'll only get more mad (crying)

He wrapped my arms around his neck and came in closer making him to go deeper..

Me: Ohh my word!! (crying)

Nka: Why are you even crying? I haven't even started, when we done I don't even want you to have a voice, I wanna hear you crying just like how you crying now when you pee. I wanna see you in a towel the whole damn day because it's too sore to even wear an underwear.. That's what I fucken want baby, I want



you to feel the pain you've put me through!!

He squeezed my cheeks..

Nka: I want to make it hurt everyday of your life until you understand just how much you've hurt me!!

.

To be continued

## NOLITHA

Hurt can and will change you to something that you not. Depending on how you choose to have it affect you, You can hurt others or choose to channel it for good. Before anything, Before him being spiritual, Nka is human. With human emotions and he is not exempted to hurt. What he's been through, What I've put him through. He was bound to lose it no matter how strong he was..

He was sleeping and I was in the bathroom, If I don't get out of here. He is going to kill me Today..

I was in the bathroom, I've never been in so much pain like how I was in pain right now..

Peeing was a mission on it's on, my urine was burning. There was a stinging sensation, I felt like I was having a UTI..

I sat on the toilet seat and called Nesta..

Me: Please pick up

She picked up on the 3rd ring..

Nesta: Hello

Me: Hey it's Me

Nesta: Madam

Me: I can't talk right now, Where are you?

Nesta: I'm at home

Me: Please give me details

Nesta: Where are you? Why are you whispering?

Me: Nesta please.. I wouldn't beg if it wasn't important

Nesta: Okay I'll text you the address

Me: Thank you

I hung up and waited...

BISHOP MIKE

Me: Val you wanted to see me?

Val: Bishop please sit

He sat down..

Val: I have a problem

Me: Okay

Val: Since I released Nka, I thought I was doing best for the show but we have lost 200k viewers and we keep on losing

Me: I don't understand what this has to do with me

Val: I think it will take time before we pick up and the nation finding you boring doesn't help

Me: So I must fake what I'm not?

Val: I'm not saying fake but you have big shoes to fill

Me: I'm not filling anyone's shoes, I'm here for my own to do me and if you don't like that. I can leave your already struggling show! What you pay me doesn't even cover my damn water bill, I'm here because I'm doing you a favor not the other way around do you understand? You should be worshiping my being here. Even Nka is nothing compared to me, I am known even internationally. I have a book that sold well, a church that is doing well. All of you are just minions to me.. I'm doing this show because I'm bored not because it's my bread and butter, So either you fucken release me from the

useless contract and get back what's his name? A struggling woman beater or you just your hole!!

NOLITHA

I checked him in the bedroom, He was still sleeping. I quickly went to the bedroom and packed up some of my shit. I was scared, He wakes up and finds me doing this, I'm dead..

I took my bag, My phone, and car keys then walked out. I went to the bathroom, Turned on the water in the bathtub but didn't put a rubber stopper so I don't flood it. I closed the door and walked out.. My legs took me faster to the kitchen door, As I opened. Phora was standing at the door step. I was still in the towel..

Phora: Noli

Me: Hi..I can't talk right now

Phora: What's happening?

Me: I have to go

I rushed out..

Phora: In a towel??

NESTA

I didn't go to work today, I didn't even have Titi go to school..

I sat down in the lounge with her..



Me: Titi why did you wet the bed?

She didn't reply back, She started shaking..

Me: Why did you wet the bed?

Titi: I didn't feel the urine coming

Me: How can you not? You are 8 years old. You shouldn't pee on your bed are you insane? What is Jef going to say about this? Do you want him to kick us out? Where are we going to go?

Titi: I'm sorry

Me: Stop Apologizing!!!

My scream frightened her..

Titi: I'm sorry Mama, I'm not going to do it again

Me: When you feel like peeing, you go to the bathroom okay?

Titi: Okay

NOLITHA

My hands were on the wheel. They were shaking and I was breathing heavy. I can't believe that I actually drove out, without any problems..

My goal is to get to Nesta's house. The pains in my womb were getting extreme, I moved the towel a little and I was bleeding. Great! Periods at this time? Right now?

ZIPHORA

I walked into the bathroom and turned off the tap. Something wasn't right here, Things on the counter were on the floor. Nolitha's clothes and underwear on the floor..

I proceeded and went to the bedroom. Nka was passed out shirtless, by his side. It was clear that someone else was sleeping next to him..

I walked up to him and woke him up..

Me: Nka

He slowly opened his eyes and extended his hand to the side. Upon realization it was empty, He rose up from the pillow..

Nka: Where is Nolitha?

Me: Nolitha went.. She had a bag and was in a towel

Nka: What?

Me: What is going on?

Nka: Not now

He got up and opened the wardrobe, He took out a Tshirt..

Nka: Can you get Ella from school?

Me: Yes but what's going on?

Nka: Thank you.. We'll talk later

KHOLO

I looked at Python, She wasn't eating Melissa and she wasn't moving. It looked like she was depressed if snakes do get depressed.

I sighed and went to get the rats.. The smell in the basement can make one vomit..

NOLITHA

I drove until I got there. I got out of my car and rushed in, Blood streaming down my thighs..

I knocked..

Me: Nesta open.. Nesta!!

I heard the key turning, She opened..

I walked in..

Nesta: Madam

Me: Lock the door

Nesta: What's happening?

Me: Please

She locked..

She looked at me..

Nesta: You bleeding, Are you okay?

I went and sat down, as tears betrayed me..

Nesta: What's wrong? What happened?

.

To be continued

74

NKA

There's nothing frustrating like driving around and looking for someone who clearly cannot be found, Someone you know that you can't and won't find. I don't know where she would ever go, Definitely not her ex Husband who abused her to the limit. Nesta,

They no longer that tight anymore and I'm sure she's also going through whatever she's going through because she doesn't have a job..

After a long time of driving, I drove back home. Phora and Ella should be driving back home now from fetching her from school.

I chilled in my bedroom, Minding my own when Raphael appeared. That was weird, I thought I didn't have the gift anymore or I disconnected from it..

Me: Raphael?

Raphael: No one expects you to be made of steel, No one is expecting you not to feel but you are becoming out of control in all the scary ways, In ways that are hurting yourself and separating you more and more from your gift



Me: A lot has happened

Raphael: Sleeping with Nolitha whilst she had the succubus also had it's impact on you

Me: I've lost so much, I don't even think I care about my gift right now

Raphael: You care

He walked up to me and placed his hand on my forehead..

Raphael: Hope this will help, After all there is a lot of good that you did

NOLITHA

I was able to take a bath. Nesta gave me a pad and pain killers. The cramps weren't getting better, The pain killers only helped for like 5min and then it was back to square one.

I was sleeping on her Daughter's bedroom, She changed the mattress and put one from the guest room..

The door opened..

Voice: Titi?

He walked in and looked at me..

Him: Who are you and where is Titi?

Me: Nesta and Titi went to town

Him: So who are you?

Me: Nesta's friend

Him: Why are you in my Step Daughter's bedroom?

Me: I think you should talk to Nesta with regards to that

Him: What the fuck is going in my house?

He walked away and closed the door....

NESTA

I was getting a few groceries that will last us until we buy groceries, month end..

I recieved a call from Jef..

Me: Hello

Jef: What's going on in my house? Who is this woman sleeping in Titi's room?

Me: Ohw that's my friend, Nolitha.. She's asking to stay with us for a couple of days she's really in a dilemma

Jef: Stay with us? Who did you talk too about this?

Me: I used to work for her, She's a really nice woman

and she helped me a lot

Jef: I don't care if she helped you even if you were sleeping under the bridge, I want this woman out of my house.. Today!

PROPHET NKA

I heard Ella waking me up..

Ella: Uncle

I woke up and she was standing over me..

I looked at her..

Ella: Are you sick?

I did feel light headed..

Me: I just have a headache, What is going on?

Ella: I'm back from school

Me: Okay.. How was school?

Ella: School was good

Me: Nolitha didn't forget you this time around

Ella: No.. Aunty Phora fetched me

Me: Aunty Phora?

Ziphora walked in..

Phora: Ella lunch is ready

Ella walked out..

Phora: Are you okay?

I looked at her..

Me: What are you doing here?

Phora: What do you mean?

Me: Where is Nolitha? And since when do you have access to my bedroom?

Phora: I don't understand

Me: What is going on?

PURGATORY

[ANGELS]

RAPHAEL

Azreal: Was it wise to wipe away his memory?

Me: He needed a little help

Azreal: You wiped away his memory of the wrongs  
his done currently



Me: I helped him connect to who he was, There more further he was away from his gift the more souls suffered. Nka is important, Who he is.. That's important, I made his heart pure again.. There was a lot of hurt and pain in there, What law did I break?

Azreal: You have faith in him?

Me: I have faith in him

Azreal: That's all I needed to know

Me: Not only did I do it for him. I did it for Nolitha and that little girl Titi, That little girl's cries and pain are heard

Azreal: You did a good thing Raphael, I wasn't judging you. You showed mercy, mercy that father has.. I'm proud Brother

KHOLLO

I walked down to the basement again..

I checked the python, it wasn't moving. She hasn't moved for a while now..

I moved the top of the cage, and pressed my thumb against it. It wasn't moving..

Me: Ohh shit!!!

I turned around and saw this woman standing behind me..

Her: Thank you

She looked at me, and I felt my soul coming out of my body..

Me: What's happening?

I fell and my soul did come out of my body. I found myself floating in the air right back into the cage. I literally went inside the python..

She got inside my body..

Me: Noooo!!!!

She got up and closed the cage.. I saw her walking out of the basement..

.

To be continued

## JANE

I looked at myself in the mirror, At least this girl has a beautiful body and she's beautiful too. My name is Jane and I'm Nolitha's Mother. For years now I've been fighting to claim my revenge with no success, Being in that python made it comfortable because my Daughter was always around. Now, I could feel her pain, hear her cries and I knew it was time to do something. Her pain set my spirit out from where it was tormented years ago..

The first thing to do is find my Daughter, Make sure she's safe then kill that bloody python. So long Mike doesn't notice that something is off. Nolitha is my main priority, Killing the python now will raise concerns from his side and he will know something is up and try something else to rebuild himself. I wanna hit him hard, Hard where he won't be able to

recover...

PROPHET NKA

Me: Come on.. Pick up

She wasn't picking up..

Clover called me..

Me: Clover

Clover: Where is Nolitha? She was supposed to show up for our meeting today

Me: What meeting?

Clover: I'm helping her with the succubus

Me: Any luck? Are you guys winning so far? How can I help?

Clover: Wow that almost sounded sincere

Me: What do you mean? I want Nolitha to get help, regain her life from this demon

Clover: Weren't you against us not so long ago?

Me: Against what?

Clover: You fucken hated Nolitha

Me: That's impossible.. I love Nolitha, Probably more than I should there's nothing she can do that will

ever make me hate her

Clover: Like sleeping with your uncle?

I paused..

Me: I don't know what's happening.. But all I know is that Nolitha would never do that in her right mind, Whoever slept with my Uncle wasn't her. It's what possessed her

Clover: Welcome back

Me: She up and left, I don't even know where to look for her

Clover: Well I don't know her that well

Phora walked in..

Me: Listen I have to go

I hung up..

Phora: I guess this is it

Me: I'm sorry that I led you on, I'm sorry I gave you false hope

Phora: I don't understand.. She has ruined your life!  
She has ruined your reputation

Me: If my reputation was ruined under God's eye, He will help me regain it

Phora: Explain it to me how you love this woman so



much who is clearly destroying you

Me: You would never understand

Phora: She attacked Ella

Me: Maybe if I also tried to help her, It wouldn't have escalated that much. God wouldn't send her my way, If he knew I wasn't going to be able to help her

It was at that moment I felt the touch of the holy spirit..

I was getting my gift back, It was unblocking..

Me: I'm truly sorry.. I hope one day you will forgive me

NOLITHA

Nesta came back..

Nesta: How are you feeling now?

Me: Still in pain

She nodded..

Me: Your husband wants me out of here

Nesta: I know

Me: I don't even know what I'm going to do

Nesta: I'll talk to him but I don't think he will let you

live here for long

Me: I understand

Nesta: Try to get some sleep

Her Daughter walked in..

Nesta: Ohh this is my Daughter Titi, Titi this is Aunty Noli

We greeted each other..

Nesta: She will be sharing the bedroom with you

Nesta looked at me..

Nesta: I must warn you, Titi is.. I don't know ever since the death of her sister she's having problems.. She pees on the bed

Me: How old is she?

Nesta: 8

Me: That's unusual

Nesta: It's embarrassing

Me: Wait a child her age can only pee on the bed if sh-

The door opened, Her man walked in. I saw Titi freezing..

Nesta: Jef

Jef: Is the situation solved?

Nesta: 2 weeks please

Jef: Another woman should never leave in your house

Nesta: Please

Me: You won't even know that I'm here, During the day I'll go out job hunting

He looked at Titi again..

Jef: 2 weeks

Me: 2 weeks

He walked out.. I looked at Titi, She had urinated on herself..

Nesta: Not again!!

Titi started crying..

Me: Let me talk to her

Nesta: Fine

Nesta walked out..

Me: Titi

She looked at me..

Me: Did you start peeing on yourself when Uncle..  
After Jef touched you down there?

She kept quiet...

Me: I can only help you if you talk to me

She still remained quiet..

Me: Did he threaten you??

She didn't say a word..

Me: Here.. Let's go bath okay?

She nodded...

JANE

I walked around the kitchen.. Damn he has been living graciously so, My pain has provided well for him..

The door opened, and he walked in. I was standing face to face now with the man who caused me so much pain..

Mike: What a long day

I walked up to him and took off his jacket..

Mike: Why did you do that?



Me: Pardon?

Mike: The only woman who used to d.. Never mind

Me: Ice tea or whiskey?

Mike: Whiskey

Me: Then you can tell me about your day

Mike: I guess so

NOLITHA

I might be reading too much into this, But I feel like this Jef is raping Titi..

I closed the bathroom door, and went to find Nesta..

Me: Hey

Nesta: Why are you out of bed?

Me: Tired of sleeping

I need to approach this matter with caution, Nesta might not believe. Titi is not talking, Jef might just influence her against me..

Me: So this Jef.. How is he? What kind of a Person is he?

Nesta: He's a wonderful man

Me: How did you get him?

Nesta: I uhm.. I used to work here as a maid. He left his wife for me

Me: Ohh you sly girl!!!

Nesta: I know

Me: Well I'm happy for you

Nesta: Thank you

PROPHET NKA

On my contact list, I stumbled on Nesta's number. I called her..

When I was about to give up, Sha picked up..

Nesta: Hello

Me: Nesta this is Prophet Nka

Nesta: Wait

(after 10 seconds)

Nesta: You have the audacity to call me after what you've done to Madam

Me: Nesta I know that.. Look I am looking for Nolitha

Nesta: So you can beat and rape her again?

Me: What?

Nesta: Don't ever call me again

She hung up...

JANE

We were in his study.. Killing him would be easy. I poured the whiskey..

I took the glass to him..

Mike: Thank you

I went and sat on the chair, I crossed my legs and

fixed my dress.. He looked at me..

Me: Is all well with you Darling?

Mike: All is well

He put the whiskey glass on the table..

Me: I shall make myself scarce for a while to go  
prepare today's suffer

I stood up and fixed my dress..

I made my way to the door...

.

To be continued

## BISHOP MIKE

I felt like I was having Déjà vu. There's little noticeable hints from Kholo that resemble my first wife Jane who passed on. Maybe I'm under a lot of stress and my mind is playing tricks on me or something, It could be that I'm reading too much into the situation. I do need some rest, I've been working hard lately and Valentia is not making things any easy for me at the studio...

## NOLITHA

I walked back into the bedroom and the door was slightly open. I heard Jef talking to Titi..

Jef: Have you told her anything?

Titi: No

Jef: You know what will happen if you told her what we do? I am going to kill you and your Mother just like how I killed Dee, The game that we play. No one is supposed to know about it

The shock that came to me whilst hearing that, That was conformation enough that indeed he was violating the child and threatening her..

Jef: What did she say to you?

Titi: Nothing.. She's just nice to me

Jef: Don't tell her anything okay?



Titi: Okay

I walked back to the kitchen..

Nesta: You okay?

Me: Nesta how well do you know this Jef?

Nesta: You kind of like obsessed with him

Me: I think.. Jef is..

Nesta: What?

Me: I just don't think you should trust him

Nesta: Are you okay?

Me: It's just that you've hardly known him that's all

Jef walked in..

Jef: Something is smelling nice

Me: Excuse me

I went back to the bedroom.. I closed the door..

Me: Titi

I walked up to her..

Me: Let's make a deal.. You tell me everything about Jef and I will make sure that he won't hurt you again..

How is that?

She kept quiet..

I took my phone to record her, but it wasn't a video just a voice note..

Me: You have to tell me what he's doing to you, That's the only way I can protect you if you tell me the truth.. Is he hurting you?

She still remained quiet..

Me: Nothing is going to happen to you and your Mother

She stabbed the pencil in between the barbie doll legs...

I exhaled...

PROPHET NKA

After how Nesta spoke to me, I'm sure that Nolitha is staying with her. If Nolitha wasn't, She would've stated..

Now I need to find out where Nesta is staying...

I made myself a cup of coffee and went to watch TV. I was watching a show where they were talking about Pythons. It triggered something, A vision. I saw souls switching from a python to some girl and vice versa..

I put the cup down.. That means Nolitha's Mother is no longer inside the python...

Me: I'll be damned!!

NOLITHA

I took the doll and made my way out of the bedroom, I checked at the kitchen Nesta wasn't there but the pots were still on the stove burning..

Jef was watching TV in the lounge..

Me: "Don't tell her, or I'll kill you like how I killed Dee"

He looked at me..

I threw the doll at him..

Me: This is what you fucken do to an 8 year old, This is what you've subjected her too.. This is what you make her think of herself!

Jef: For someone who is homeless you sure talk a lot of rubbish! Who is going to believe you? What proof do you have? You think Nesta is going to believe you? Nesta can't even notice that her Daughter is being sexually abused! I wouldn't have a child with her, She's a horrible Mother!! What's your shake down then? Now what?

I took out my phone..

Me: Thank you.. I was recording you

I wasn't recording him but he doesn't know that..

Jef: You bitch!!

Me: I am sending it to my trusted contact. So listen carefully.. You are going to stay away from here, and I you will let me stay here for longer until I know that child is safe, if anything happens to me or her. My trusted contact is going to make sure that you rot in hell!! Pathetic!!

I picked up the doll and walked back into the bedroom...

JANE (NOLITHA'S MOTHER)

I checked her phone, Looks so different from phones in our days. It required a fingerprint to unlock it..

I put it down, Now how will I contact Nka since we last spoke when I was asking him to deliver a message to my Daughter..

It's difficult to adapt to this change.. It's a lot of change, Things look different, Things work differently..

The house phone rang disturbing me from my thoughts...

I walked over to answer it, At least I still know how they work..

Me: Hello

Voice: Hello who is this?

Me: It's Ja.. It's Kholo

Voice: Mike's new thang?



Me: New thang

Voice: Are you Nolitha's Mother?

Me: Who is this? How did you get the number?

Voice: Trust me I went through a lot of trouble, This is Prophet Nka

Me: Ohh yes Prophet.. I wanted to talk to you

Nka: Nolisa left, I can't find her anywhere

Me: I thought she was with you

Nka: Long story.. Nolitha has the succubus and there

more she's out there she's going to hurt a lot of people

Me: Yes I know about the succubus and I think I can help to drive it out

Nka: You do?

Me: It's a spirit, an angry evil spirit.. Yes I can help

Nka: That sounds good thank you, I know who is she is I just don't know where they are

NOLITHA

I see myself in Titi. A sexually abusive step father. Being scared to talk. Jef might do to Nesta what Mike did to my Mom, and actually take Titi. Groom

her to be his wife.

It broke my heart because for the life of me I don't know why Nesta is not noticing this. Titi show all the signs of being sexually abused and her Mother can't see..

My first thought was to sleep with Jef, kill him with the succubus but I can't. That would be easy and I'll also be setting myself a 100 steps backwards!

.

To be continued

77

NOLITHA

Titi and I were laying in bed, She was playing games with my phone...

Me: Here you do this

Titi: Okay

Me: You know when I was young too, when I was roughly your age. My Mother and I, We were living with a man who was dating my Mother. Then he also used to violate me sexually. It hurt, I didn't like it. He threatened to kill me and my Mother too..

Titi: Did he kill your Mother?

Me: Yes.. Only because I didn't talk, but had I talked my Mother and I were going to leave

Titi: Mama gets angry

Me: I know but I need you to understand something, This is not your fault. No one, A man and a woman is supposed to make you feel uncomfortable. If a man forces himself on you, that is a crime. The police will come and lock him away then he will never hurt you again

Titi: Do you think we should tell Mom?

Me: I think we should.. And I will be there protecting you

## JEFFERSON

This shit was real, but wait a minute.. If Nolitha really had recorded me, She would go straight to the cops. The anger she portrayed, She was going to run straight to the cops not pull threats. She doesn't have a recording, Even if she did. I doubt it'll be effective we were standing far from each other and her phone was in her pocket..

I threw the cigarette on the ground and stepped on it then went back inside.. Nesta was in the bedroom looking at Dee's picture.

She was emotional..

Me: We need to talk

She didn't look at me..

Me: Nolitha has to go

She turned and looked at me..

Nesta: I thought you were now okay with it

Me: Nesta you can't have another woman living under the same roof with your man are you insane? That's where relationships start to go down hill. Do you want this woman to cook up stories like I came on her, do you know how dangerous friends are? Don't be stupid!

Nesta: Nolitha is not like that

Me: I don't care.. I want her out today, or all of you are going!

Nesta: Fine.. I'll tell her

JANE (NOLITHA'S MOTHER)

Me: "Here I am

What you did?

Look at me

Life in jail

Mmm-mmm-mmh

Agnus dei

Mmm-mmh

Agnus Dei"

I opened the cage and put my arm in, She neared closer and opened her mouth wide..



Me: There.. There.. Now Kholo, you will be out of this creature soon but I need your help first. If you don't work with me, I will kill you

She went back..

I put the lid back on..

Me: It's only a matter of time now..

NESTA

Nolitha and Titi asked for our audience. We all met up in the lounge..

Noli: Nesta.. Titi wants to tell you something

I looked at Titi..

Noli: It's okay.. Go ahead dear

Titi: Un.. Uncle has been sleeping with me

Jef laughed..

Jef: This is funny, wasn't I talking to you about this not so long ago? That this will happen?

Noli: Nesta you have to believe her, Why would Titi lie? Dee didn't die in the bathtub how many times has Dee taken a bath and never drowned? Dee was old enough there's no way she would sink under the bathtub it's not even deep.. Dee noticed what happened and she was about to tell you, Then he intervened and killed her.. Look Titi is 8, her bladder is strong enough to hold urine. She's strong enough to feel urine and go to the bathroom.. Look

She threw Titi's doll at me..

Noli: Look in between the doll's legs, She's been trying to communicate

Jef: This is ridiculous! Where would this have happened?? Under your nose? Nesta you are a Mother, a Woman I'm sure you would've noticed. This woman is filling up ideas in Titi's head.. Didn't I tell you? Titi is old enough she would've long talked, I'm sure at school they teach them

Noli: Nesta..

Jef: Titi why are you doing this? Haven't I been good to you? Your Mother? And Dee?

Titi kept quiet..

Noli: You have to believe Titi. She's your Daughter and you know your daughter

I looked at the doll..

Me: Titi's behavior changed after Dee's death. If this was truly happening, Titi would have changed way before. Titi is suffering the trauma of the death of her sister and now she's making up stories

Noli: Nesta!!

Me: Jef is hiv positive, He would never and I mean never do that.. He even protects me as his woman why would he purposely infect my Daughter? It doesn't make sense. My man is well respected, He has integrity and he is a business man. He knows what this will mean to him and his status and reputation why would he do this?

Noli: I cannot believe this

Me: I've tried.. Titi I've tried.. This, I did this for you and Dee, and this is how you repay me? Why do you hate me so much?

Titi: Mama I'm sorry

Me: Obviously Titi is a little demon.. I cannot have such in my house.. I want both you gone! With immediate effect

I got up..

Me: Both of you leave my house!!! I just buried my Daughter not long ago now this?? I want you both gone!!

I walked to the bedroom..

Titi: Mama I'm sorry (crying)

Jef: Sweetheart kicking Titi out that's extreme, I'm sure when Nolitha leaves we will work something out as a family

Me: If she stays here any longer.. I'm going to kill her myself!! Out.. I want them out now!!

PROPHET NKA

Clover: Here

Me: Thank you

Clover: I thought you were done with dodgy things

Me: It's not for me

Clover: Who is it for?

Me: I'm helping a dear friend

Clover: This medication is said to make one hallucinate

Me: That's exactly what we want

He shook his head..

NOLITHA

I was so disappointed in Nesta, very very disappointed..

Titi was crying as I packed up her things..

Jef walked in..

Jef: Titi is not going anywhere.. Titi come

Titi walked up to me and hid behind me, hugging my waist tight..

Me: Titi is leaving with me

Jef: See how easy it was to convince Nesta?  
Imagine if I say we should lay a charge of kidnapping against you



Me: Bring it on

Jef: If I come back into this bedroom and you have left with Titi, I'm laying a charge of kidnap and Nesta will call the cops

I watched him leave..

Me: Okay.. It's okay.. We going to be okay

The only Person I could think of right now to help me hates me, All I know is that Titi and I we going to live on the run..

.

To be continued

No edits

## PROPHET NKA

I looked around, up and down the street. There wasn't any car coming. It was cold..

I paced up and down, I hope she hasn't changed her mind and didn't even tell me..

I waited for another 10min, The street lights at least provided some light. It wasn't a total darkness..

I saw headlights, I exhaled in relief. The car drove and parked not far from me. The door at the back opened, A lady got out and made her way to me..

Her: Prophet Nka

Me: Jane?

Her: Nice to finally meet you in the flash

Me: Same here

I took out the pills..

Me: Here

She took the container. Unzipped her bag, emptied them inside the bag..

Her: Here, I think the container will be safe with you

I took it back..

Her: Any word from Nolitha?

Me: Uhm.. No, I'm still looking

Her: What really happened between you two?

Me: It's a long story.. I'll tell you when we have time,  
Or when we find her she'll explain everything

She nodded..

Her: Thank you for this again

Me: Good luck

I looked at the car..

Her: Don't worry about the driver, He won't snitch

Me: Are you sure?

Her: Let's say I'm very persuasive

Me: Goodluck then.. I'll hear from you

Her: Thank you

NOLITHA

Titi cried herself to sleep in the car.. My phone rang,  
It was Nesta..

Me: Hey.. How is it going?

Nesta: How far are you guys?

Me: We far away from the house

Nesta: That's good.. I'll send more money, I'm going to loot him.. He owes Titi that much

Me: Nesta you don't have to do this

Nesta: All along I thought my Daughter was acting up, I took out my Frustrations on her all in the while she was abused under my roof and I couldn't see it. If you didn't come, I'd still think she's acting up

Me: We can just have him arrested

Nesta: I want my child to have peace without going

to court, That's more trauma

Me: I'm sure they won't have Titi testify in front of the whole court, They can record her privately in a safe space

Nesta: I don't want her to relive the trauma, I don't want him to get away with it. He killed two of my children, Titi is living but dead inside.. I just hope one day she will forgive me, The last words my Daughter will remember from me is me kicking her out and she didn't understand why.. Why she was violated but also getting punished for it

Me: When it's safe you and Titi will meet up and you can explain to her, If not.. I'll make sure she knows you were trying to save her

Nesta: Thank you for everything, I know my Daughter is safe with you

Me: I relate to her a lot

Nesta: Please take care of her

Me: I will.. I promise

JANE (NOLITHA'S MOTHER)

I've seen bits and pieces of what was happening in that house. How he drove my child insane, How he drove Melissa insane. Both girls thought they were losing touch with reality whilst Mike was behind it..

I'm going to make him taste his own medicine. I'm going to drive him clinically insane and make him question his sanity. I'm going to drive him crazy so much that he ends up confessing his crimes..



I want his own insanity make him lose everything.  
Have him breakdown at church and possibly not  
even recover from this!!

NESTA

I also found the pills that he was using to drug me  
with. I crushed the remaining and poured them in the  
coffee container. He loves coffee..

He walked in..

Jef: What are you doing?

Me: I was preparing us some coffee

Jef: So when are you going to make that call to the

police?

Me: I will

I handed him the cup of coffee..

He looked at it and chuckled..

Jef: You think I'm stupid?

Me: Sorry?

Jef: Ever since you got here, I've never seen you drinking coffee. All of a sudden, you a fan. Not unless you wanna drug me, not unless you believed Titi and Nolitha. Is that why you stalling with the phone call? why you gladly volunteered for Titi to go?

I looked at him..

Jef: Biggest mistake

Me: No.. You did the biggest mistake

I poured the coffee I was holding on his face..

Jef: Stupid bitch!!

I went and took the cooking pan, He walked over to the sink to pour cold water on his face. I hit him at the back of his head with the pen.. He fell down screaming..

I kept on hitting him and hitting him, Neutralizing him..

NOLITHA

My phone rang. I answered without checking.

Me: Hello

Nka: Please don't hang up

Me: What do you want?

Nka: Where are you? I'm worried about you

Me: Are you tracing this call?

Nka: Nolitha please listen

Me: Don't call me ever!!

I hung up..

NESTA

I checked if he was breathing.. He was. I went and took the zip ties. Tied both his hands and feet then dragged him across the floor to the guest room..

.

To be continued

## NOLITHA

Nesta gave us R5000, All the money she had in the world. After that long drive to nowhere, We pulled into a Bnb. They charged me R1000 for two nights, breakfast included the two of us.. Titi was awake now, It'll be a good time to call her Mother.. I dialed Nesta, not knowing how the situation that side was going but only hoping for the best..

Nesta: Hello

I was relieved when she picked up, I put her on loud speaker..

Me: Titi is awake, You are on loud speaker

Nesta: Titi

Titi: Mama

Nesta: I want you to know that Mama believes you, I am sorry I didn't see him hurting you. I'm sorry I didn't see him hurting Dee, I'm sorry I was hard on you. Mama can only imagine how terrifying it was for you when he hurt you, and I wasn't there to save you. I promise you, He will never hurt you again

Titi: Is he going to jail? Aunty Noli says he's going to jail

Nesta: Yes he is.. Because what he was doing to you was wrong, and Aunty Noli will make sure that no man hurts you that way ever again

Titi: Okay

Nesta: I love you so much, Now you are young and you don't understand but this pain is going to catch up with you as you grow older but don't let it destroy you grow up and channel it to do good. Be a blessing and not a curse in the world, don't hurt others but heal others. I love you and I pray God grants you the wisdom to follow these blessings I'm giving to you right now. I want you to grow up and be a better woman, a better mother than I was. I want you to be educated, So you don't have to throw yourself at any man for the security of your kids. I love you my Daughter and I am sorry, Trust Aunty Noli. She will take care of you. I'm so proud of you for speaking up

That was heart warming, What Nesta did and still is doing for her Daughter. It's heart warming..

JANE (NOLITHA'S MOTHER)



I poured the crushed pills into the whiskey bottle. I shook a bit in his study. The pills won't kill him, But they will drive him mad. Make him delusional and hallucinate..

I put the bottle back on the small table and smiled. I walked out of the study straight to the bedroom..

BISHOP MIKE

I looked at Python. She looked fine and she was eating Melissa. So basically my mind was playing games on me..

I walked out and went to the bedroom, I checked. Kholo was sleeping, I then went back to my study. I poured myself a glass of whiskey and sat down on my chair. I played some music too...

NESTA

I sat on the chair and waited for him to wake up. He woke up and found himself tied up to the corner of the bed, He was naked..

He looked at me and laughed..

Jef: I'm going to make it out of here, I'm going to kill you and then kill that daughter of yours

I nodded..

Me: I need the pin for your banking app

Jef: Over my dead body

I was holding his phone..

Me: Okay

I walked up to him..

I cut off his toe, He screamed..

Jef: Fuck you!! Whatever you do to me won't wipe away the fact that I infected your Daughter. I raped her, She'll grow up and live with the disease. No man is going to love her, No man is going to want her..  
Yes Nesta I did it! I killed Dee, I strangled her until I saw the life being sucked out of her eyes. I stood there and let Titi watch, Then I drowned her!

Me: Shut up!! Shut up!!

I moved the gag from his neck to his mouth..

Me: Shut up!!

I squeezed his balls hard, He groaned in pain.

Me: Shut up!!!!!!!!!!

NOLITHA

The pains in my womb were getting intense so was the bleeding.. I couldn't keep up anymore..

I took my phone and called Nka..

Nka: Noli

Me: I need your help

Nka: I'm listening

Me: I need to go to the hospital, but I have someone with me who needs shelter. Her name is Titi, She's 8.. I need you to come fetch her, Come with Ella. She's been raped and she won't trust you but if Ella is around it might help her

Nka: Send me your location we'll be there

I hung up....

NESTA

Me: I know what you did can't be reversed. I'm no longer doing this for my kids but saving other kids from a rapist. I am going to cut you, Put you through a lot of physical pain until you die. You have won

nothing, My child is going to grow up, She's going to have a life that you tried so bad to destroy!

Meanwhile you, You won't have a legacy.. You will be forgotten!!, You will die miserable. Your family will have to bury you in pieces. Look at me because I am the one who is taking your life, At this moment. I played God in your life!!!

NOLITHA

Me: Titi listen.. I am sick I have to go to the hospital, I have a friend who is going to come and pick you up. He's going to stay with you until I get back.. He has a niece, almost same age as you. Her name is Ella, okay?

She nodded...

Me: You going to have to trust him, He's not going to hurt you. He is sent by God to protect you until I

come back from the hospital okay?

Titi: Okay

I hope I'm making the right choice here...

BISHOP MIKE

One glass turned into a lot of glasses, I drank that whiskey until I felt like passing out. I then indeed passed out on my desk..

NOLITHA

Nka did show up, He showed up with Ella..

I was taken down to the living room and waiting for an ambulance. I looked at him and he looked

different, different from the monster that tortured me at his house through rape..

Nka: We can't leave until the Ambulance gets here, When it does. We will follow you to the hospital, So Titi can see you

Me: Thank you

Titi and Ella were sitting on the other couch, They were playing a game. Ella is a free soul, Very friendly and I was happy to see her accommodating Titi.. Nka sat next to me..

Nka: She's HIV positive Nolitha, I can see and feel her pain. She's been through a lot and I'm proud of you for helping her out

Me: I relate to her in a lot of ways



Nka: She needs stability, She needs a home. I think you guys should come back

The manager walked in..

Manager: The Ambulance has arrived

.

To be continued

80

NOLITHA

A WEEK LATER

Nka and Titi walked in, I was getting discharged this morning....

I had miscarried, and by the look of things I was pregnant way before the succubus entered me. Which means, It was Nka's baby. The Dr had asked me a few questions and I remembered when I slept with Gatsha he had troubles ejaculating and he didn't come inside of me, He came on the towel.. Now my memory was serving me right..

Titi: Aunty Noli

Me: Hey..

I hugged her..

Nka: Hey

Me: Hi

Titi: We went to church yesterday

Me: Really?

Titi: I sang and everyone stood up and sang with me

Me: You enjoy church?

Titi: It's nice

Me: I'm glad

Nka: She's starting to settle in well, even the therapist said she's doing well but she's going to have episodes were she will breakdown

Nka has been of help with Titi. Got her a therapist, She's going to church. We decided she will go back to school next year, This year we are trying to work on her mental state, on her healing..

Nka: Are you ready to go?

Me: Yes I'm ready

Nka: Let's go

NESTA

As much as I wanted to eliminate Him, but I didn't wanna do it soon. So I was keeping him alive as long as possible. I would clean his hoods with an antiseptic, Feed him, Bath him etc.. He was done, He was just barely hanging on..

I walked in, I was from buying him food..

He was shaking bed, The leg were I had cut off his toes was starting to rot. It was swollen and black..

Jef: Nesta please

Me: I got you something to eat

Jef: Just kill me once

Me: I'm not a killer, I'll let death takes it course on you. I'll pray your own body gives up on you, by the way you are. If I were you, I'd pray it gives up on me very fast

Jef: If I give you the pin to my.. To my.. Will you let me go? You and your Daughter can start afresh somewhere new with 300k

Me: Now we talking

Jef: My pin is 5434

I took his phone and put it in, Indeed he was right, but he didn't have 300k. He had 280k, which is still okay..

I transferred it all to Nolitha, That is Titi's money as

she grows. Nolitha will need financial help, I hope Nolitha will use it wisely. Do something that will sustain them more..

Me: The fnb one please

He gave me the password. There wasn't much in there, 36k. I transferred 20k to them again. The rest I'll be spending it on me in the meantime. The remaining 16k. Nolitha will also erect a tombstone for Dee..

BISHOP MIKE

I had a meeting with the church elders..

Elder: So this one goes to the compound?

I was having it bad. Lately I don't sleep well, I see things. Things that I am not meant to see..  
Sometimes I see python out of cage, I see Melissa.  
It's a lot.. I down whiskey a lot to much to help me cope everyday..

Elder 2: Bishop may I please have a word with you?

Me: Okay

We walked out..

Elder 2: Bishop are you okay?

Me: I am fine

Elder 2: You clearly look like you haven't slept, you smelling of whiskey. Your head is not here at all



Me: I've been having a bad day

Elder 2: If you need help, You can talk

Me: I know.. But I'm fine thank you

NOLITHA

Me: I thought we were going home

Nka: I have a surprise for you

Me: An outing at a restaurant?

Nka: Not entirely.. There's someone who would like to meet you

He pulled out and we all got out. We walked into the restaurant, and approached a table where a lady was sitting. She looked young to be wearing like how she was. A whole white two piece with red roses. White boots and a matching hat. The two piece was formal silk pants and a jacket. Underneath the hat was a white fascinator. She was wearing like some England royalty, My Mother used to wear like this. Even how her hair was done..

Me: Your new wife?

Nka chuckled..

Nka: No

She carefully placed the cup of tea back on the table..

Lady: There they are

Nka: Sorry that we late

Lady: Ohh don't sweat it Dear

They hugged..

Nka: This is Nolitha

She was up from the chair by now..

Lady: Nolitha

She walked up to me..

I looked at her in the eyes, Something about her

eyes..

Lady: You've grown so much

Me: Who are you?

Lady: It's Me.. Mama

I took a few steps back..

Lady: I know it's a lot to take in

Nka: I couldn't believe it either but.. It's her, She's the real deal

Lady: Litha

Me: My mom used to call me that

Lady: I know because I am your Mother.. It's a lot to explain and take in.. Please have breakfast with me and I'll explain. An old woman will really appreciate it

NESTA

I heard a knock at the door. I put the gag on him..

I walked out and locked the bedroom. I put my key away and went to check..

I opened.. Some guy was standing at the door..

Me: Morning

Him: Morning Mam

Me: May I help you?

Him: My name is Peter and I am a manager at Mr Jeff's office

As I was working there. I never got the chance to meet the staff because we knocked in earlier than anyone else....

Me: Okay

Him: He hasn't showed up at work, which is unlike him

Me: Yes.. My husband is.. He's not doing well currently

Him: Is he around?

Me: No.. He's not.. He's at the hospital and I was going to see him

Him: Which hospital?

Me: My husband is uhm.. He's hiv positive and he's sick now.. He doesn't want to see anyone currently because she doesn't want anyone knowing but I am telling you because you obviously seem Frustrated

Him: That's.. Wow.. I..

Me: I'll have him call you or Email you and you will go see him if he wants you to come

Him: Okay.. Thank you very much Mam

Me: Thank you

I closed the door and locked it.. That was so close,  
People are starting to notice...

NOLITHA

Nka gave us space, Titi was sitting with us..

My Mother told me everything..

Me: I.. I don't even know what to say, I'm trying so  
hard not to cry right now

Ma: I know.. It's time Noli.. It's time for him to pay for  
what he did



Me: Why you never came out long ago

Ma: I couldn't take your body and Melissa, She was weak and by then I thought you were going to be alright but when Kholo came.. I knew that it was time

I nodded..

She looked at Nka walking in, He went to the counter to fetch the takeaways..

Ma: He loves you, I don't know what happened but he does. Probably loves you more than any other man that has ever loved you, Give him a second chance, you weren't perfect either. You've hurt him and he forgave you

Me: This is Titi.. I am her guardian

Ma: How lovely, She's so cute

Me: She is indeed

.

To be continued

NOLITHA

We all drove out to Nka's house. Nka left us, Ella was around too.. Things between her and I haven't been well ever since I lashed out on her... We fetched her from school, It was sports day..

I decided to talk to her in private..

Me: Hi

Ella: Hi

Me: Remember you and I had a sad moment?

She nodded..

Me: Aunty Nolitha wasn't feeling well that time, She was sick

Ella: Are you going to die?

Me: No but I am better now and I wanted to say I'm sorry.. I didn't mean to hurt you and break your trust

Ella: It's okay.. My Uncle say we should forgive because if we don't God won't bless us

Me: That's true

Ella: Is Titi your Daughter?

Me: Something like that

Ella: I like her

Me: I think she likes you too

Titi walked in..

Ella: Titi look

Ella took out a rubber band, it was in a package with cookies and sweets..

Ella: I bought this for you at school

Titi: Thank you

They shared a hug..

Titi: Let's go out swimming. I like swimming

I liked the bond between them. Ella might be like this because she has been the only child in the house..

Ella looked at me..

Ella: May we please have some privacy to change?

Me: Huh?

Ella: My teacher said we should always have Privacy when we change

Me: Is your teacher white?

Ella: No it's Mrs Dunham, not White

She looked at Titi..

Ella: Mrs white

They both laughed..

Me: Okay I'm leaving, You girls have bored me anyway

I closed the door on my out and went to the kitchen. My Mother has made herself comfortable. She had my apron on and was cooking...

Me: Mother! This is not your house

Ma: Pass me the chopped tomatoes.. I'm making our favorite dish

Me: You know I've never cooked it ever since, It always reminded me of you

Ma: Why you never told me?

Me: That I never cooked it?

Ma: That Mike used to molest you?

Me: I didn't know what to say, How did you know?  
There was no penetration

Ma: I see how you are connected to this little girl,  
Most of the time you connect like that to a child  
because of your own experiences

Me: True



She closed the pot, I suddenly felt dizzy and took a few steps back..

Ma: What's wrong?

I looked around but all I could see was darkness..

Ma: Nolitha!!!!

NESTA

Me: Now that I've looted you, I think my job is done here

Jeff: I thought you were going to let me go?

Me: Are you serious?

Jeff: Nesta you won't get away with this

I saw a police car parked by the gate.. I went to the window, It was Peter and he was with the Police..

Jeff started laughing...

Me: I guess it ends like this, All doors locked. They will need to use force to get in

I took the big knife..

Jeff: Nesta nooo!!!

NOLITHA

I looked around, All I could see was total darkness..

Me: Hello???

My voice echoed..

I walked around and found myself at the edge, I glanced down it was fire.. I stepped back..

Voice: Two spirits cannot occupy the same body

I turned, There it was.. The succubus..

She looked beautifully scary..

Me: The succubus

Succubus: We meet

Her eyes were pure white..

Succubus: Either you or I

Me: Excuse me?

Succubus: You shut me out, Locked me in your mind.  
Tamed me, I dragged you here. This is our last fight.  
One of us will end up in that hell fire, Then one will  
occupy the body fully

She took out the whip...

Succubus: Let's play!!

NESTA

Officer: Did is your last warning, Come out with your hands in the air

I had cut off his dick, his balls, took out his eyeballs and now I was dissecting him and taking out his heart..

I heard them breaking the door, Isn't that against the law?

I ripped the heart out..

I heard them talking, Heard their footsteps..

I got up, Turned the chair and sat facing the window..

They tried to open this door but it was locked..

Officer: Are you in there?

Peter: We need to have it opened right now

PROPHET NKA

I drove back home like a mad Person. I was with  
Clover..

We rushed in..

Ella: It's Aunty Noli

She was wet and covering herself with a towel..

Me: Girls go into the bedroom and change

They ran to their bedroom..

Nolitha was on the couch..

Me: Jane what happened?

Jane: She's fighting the succubus in the spiritual realm

Me: What?

Clover: How? What initiated that?

Jane: Me

Me: What?

Jane: You wanted me to help

Me: How did you even do it?

Jane: At the restaurant, She had tea.. I put in this white ball.. This little white ball is pure and it triggered the succubus inside

Clover: Let me see that!

Clover looked at it..

Clover: The pentacle

Me: Isn't it supposed to be for protection?



Clover: Yes but the pentacle and evil can't occupy the same space. When Nolitha drank the tea the good that went inside is fighting the evil

Jane: Clever

Me: What do we do? How do we get her back?

Clover looked at Jane..

Clover: We can't.. She's far in. We take her out the succubus will dragged her and jump in with her..  
Nolitha has to defeat it

Nka: No.. She's not ready

Clover: We have no choice

Jane: Well then gentlemen my pots are burning I'm sure

Me: You can't seriously be this calm

Jane: I meant to ask you, Where do you keep your wine? My dish will need wine

I can't believe this woman...

NESTA

They broke the door down and came in..

Officer: Mam

Peter: Ohh my God

Officer: Get him out

My arms were balancing on my thighs. My hands dripping down..

Officer: Stand up and put your hands on your head

I slowly got up and put my hands up.. After a while I felt him grabbing my hands and cuffing them.. He turned me around, I looked at him..

Me: Boooooo!!!

I started laughing..

Officer: Psycho.. You going straight to the loony bin!!

That's what I wanted to hear..

.

To be continued

82

NKA

I banged the bottle wine on the kitchen counter..

Me: There's your wine

Jane: Ohh my such hostility. It is often said that when one handles anything that goes in the cooking, holding too much inside. The food will taste bad

Me: I don't care about what's often said

Jane: I understand that you are upset

Me: Nolitha wasn't ready

Jane: When I was killed I wasn't ready too.. When I was trapped inside a python, I wasn't ready too but it happened. Nolitha wasn't ready to be possessed by a succubus. Look Nka unfortunately life doesn't care whether you ready or not. Life is not going to step back and say "Ohh I'm sorry, I'll wait. You not ready".. This life doesn't work like that! We all don't know the strength we have deep within until we are hit by a situation. True courage comes from a challenge. How are you to know that you are strong when life doesn't throw arrows at you? When you win that's when you realize that you strong. Nolitha doesn't know how strong she is Because to me it seems like you were always there as her saving grace.. What happens when you not there? She needs to rely on her own strength, She needs to start relying on God and not people. People disappoint and when you don't know how to be there for you at your worst, you surely won't make it. When I'm done with my revenge,

I'll be gone. We won't have direct physical contact. That's when she has to know that even when she can't see me, I'll always be there for her and so is God. She shouldn't put her whole trust in me too as an ancestor, Hell dare I could be mad on the other side that I didn't get a cow or a Goat. She has to first put her strength in God, because no matter how much of a bad ancestor I can be.. I am not above God and God will surely protect her from me.. Judge her not without first giving her the benefit of the doubt, You lose faith you confuse things.

BISHOP MIKE

I picked up my glass and drank..

Voice: This is what it has come too now?

She crawled into my office..

Melissa, Her body was a python and the head it was her..

Melissa: This is what has become of you

Me: What do you want from me?

Melissa: You fed me to a python! You made me this way

Me: No.. It can't be, You can't be.. This is just my mind playing tricks on me!!

Melissa: Ohh but I'm here, Communicating with you

She crawled her way to me and I couldn't move. I was frozen on the chair. She curled herself on my legs going all the way up..

Melissa: Confess!!

We were face to face, the snake tongue protruding from her mouth..

Melissa: Confess!!

Me: I confess! I confess!

Melissa: To the whole congregation, My family and on television. Confess your iniquities

Me: Why are you doing this to me?

She opened her mouth, I saw those sharp canines..  
She bit me on the neck..



Me: Ahhhhh!!!!

I woke up. I had passed out on my desk, I looked around. I was alone, There was no Melissa in the study room. I was alone. I put my hand on my neck, and it came back with blood.. I freaked out that I fell off the chair.

NESTA

Guard: We've got a live one

Nurse: Ohh yeah?

Guard: Held her husband hostage and chopped him

Me: And the sad part of it all, They busted me before I could even eat his dick

Nurse: Why did you do it!

Me: Well he was a devil with horns

Nurse: We got a live one indeed, This one won't even stand trial

Guard: Will you book her in?

Nurse: Yes.. Keep her in order as I book her in

The last thing I wanted was my Doctor to visit me in prison, prison is gruesome too. I'd take a loony bin than a prison anyday..

NOLITHA

She swung her whip at me, I moved and it hit the ground dispensing fire. The rocks trembled..

Succubus: We can do this till eternity

Me: What do you want from me? Just leave me and my body alone

Succubus: I was sent to you

Me: Bye who?

Succubus: The ex husband

Me: Mike?

Succubus: Yes now move along to the fire or I'll throw you inside there myself!!

NKA

I looked at her, She just kept on sweating. Talking things that didn't make sense and also looking like she's having a seizure. Her body would just tremble and stop

I put the towel on her forehead..

Nka: You need to fight this, You need to fight her

NESTA

After booking me in, and me changing my clothes.. They went and put me in the room. I was classified as dangerous so I can't mix with the rest for their own safety that's what they say..

Tomorrow the Dr will be in to run the psychiatric evaluation on me..

This has just become my new home..

NOLITHA

She swung it again and it landed on my leg,leaving a burning sensation..

Me: Dammit stop!!!

She had trapped me, The more I moved backwards the more I was getting closer and closer to the fire..

Succubus: How sweet.. I'll have your body once more!!

NKA

Clover: She's going to make it she's done wanting to fight it

Me: I know

Clover: Then have a little faith

I kept on moving the towel on face..

Me: Come Noli, You can do this

.

To be continued

The succubus

## SEASON FINALE

83

JANE (NOLITHA'S MOTHER)

I got back home that night to find Mike curled up in a corner in his study..

I walked up to him and looked at him. He wasn't blinking, He looked scared. Like shock took over..

I crouched and looked at him..

Me: Come on let's go to bed

I don't want him totally disoriented as yet, I want him to suffer through..

I stood up on my feet and helped him up..

Me: Come on, Let's go to bed

PROPHET NKA

Since Titi joined the family and our house, I got a twin bed in Ella's bedroom so they can both sleep in separate beds..

I tucked them in after saying our midnight prayer..

Titi: Is Aunty Noli going to be okay?

Me: Yes.. She's going to be fine, Go to bed



Titi: Okay

Me: I'll see you guys in the morning.. I love you

Ella: I love you too

Titi: I love you too

We have 3 bedrooms. Since my Mother is no longer around, Her bedroom is not occupied. Nolitha was sleeping in my bedroom, and I'll be sleeping in my Mother's bedroom..

Clover put a necklace of protection around her neck..

I hope she will beat it soon, or her body will deteriorate...

NESTA

We were woken up at 7am the following morning. To bath and eat breakfast as the Dr will come and do the consultations..

Though it seems like we are prisoners, but we are treated better than they would in jail..

The food was also acceptable..

Guard: Phone calls are made everyday from 11:00am-13:00pm you late, you will have to wait until tomorrow

I've had to memorize Nolitha's number so I can call her everyday and check up on them.

NOLITHA

I don't even know how to defeat a succubus. She had all the makings to defeat me, She had a weapon and I had nothing. All the while she's been busy attacking me, strifing my soul and it was tiring..

Succubus: There more you resist, There more you strain your soul. Even if you win at the end which I doubt you will, You'll never be the same again. Your soul will be wounded, You'll live physically but you'll be dead inside

Not forgetting to mention how hot it was around here, She wasn't affected by the hotness but me..

Me: Why are you doing this to me? What did I do to you? (Crying)

Succubus: Nolitha let go, let it be. Give yourself up. Where was God when your step father used to molest you as a defenseless child? Sneaking into your bedroom and jerking himself off against your ass. When your Mother was brutally killed by the same man? When the same man alienated you from your family? When you had to marry him and all those riches weren't gold? They came from your Mother's pain? Where was God? If he's claimed to be that powerful why let someone a mere human being practice evil in his own name? Mislead the church? Oh don't get me started on the Prophet. See Nolitha you are a curse in the world, I don't know why you'd still want to live in the world that is exempting you from being human. Accept death, Accept your fate and be free from the cruelty of this world

JANE (NOLITHA'S MOTHER)

I went to his study.. I mixed the pills again with

whiskey. His whiskey was finishing, I refilled it. I poured him a glass and went upstairs. He was still in bed..

Me: Good morning

He slowly opened his eyes..

Me: Here's a starter of the day

He extended his hand and got it from me..

Me: I'll get your sleeping pills so you can drink and rest

I went and got them then gave him one..

Me: In the meantime I will be preparing food, you get

some rest

I walked out of the bedroom and locked the door behind me. I went down to the basement to get python..

PROPHET NKA

Me: Ella here is ready

I looked at Titi..

Me: Please go and tell Ella breakfast is ready

Titi: Okay

Titi went to the bedroom.. Jane will be here soon..

I heard the door bell ring..

I went to the kitchen to open, It was Clover.

Me: Thought you were Jane

Clover: We have a problem

Me: What problem?

He followed me to the dinning area..

Clover: Where Nolitha is, they don't interpret time like us. 3min to her there could be 3 months to us

Me: Point Clover

Clover: Yes the point is.. It's almost gonna be a day since she's gone to her it's probably 5min, The longer she stays there the longer her soul will be strained and the longer her body will give up.. Then the worst will come

Me: The worst?

Clover: Her soul will be troubled so much that she will turn into a demon

Me: What do we do?

The girls came out running..

Me: No running!



Clover: We communicate with her, We find a way to communicate with her and then after she defeats the succubus and comes back

Ella: What is a succubus?

Me: It's a country

Titi: Are we going there?

Me: No.. Finish up eating so we can drive Ella to school

JANE (NOLITHA'S MOTHER)

Python was heavy.. I had to drag her from the basement up to the bedroom..

I unlocked and put her down..

I went and locked the bathroom and the sliding door.  
Then I went out and locked the bedroom..

Now I had to go and checked up on Nolitha..

NESTA

The Dr ran the tests and exams.. Dr Kooper..

Kooper: We done for today

On his table there were pictures of the crime scene..

Me: I'm just glad that you are not a demon, or this exam would've ended up with your dick in my mouth and not Bj but me eating it

He went to wash his hands.. I looked over at my file..

I ran my eyes down at the bottom and it was written in red big letters..

"Patient shall remain in the care of the institution for 7 years"

He went and got the guard to take me back..

.

To be continued

Your bonus will follow up

## SEASON FINALE

84

JANE (NOLITHA'S MOTHER)

I looked at her.. My Daughter has been through the most hardest and stinging pain. She has never known happiness in her life, The happiness she's lived was only partial..

Ever since my death, She's been used. Abused and pressed down. Now this? If I could, I would take all this pain away from her..

Clover walked in with his book..

Clover: I haven't found a way we could

communicate with her

Me: Son put the book down

Clover: It's like you don't want her to get help

Me: Communicating with her is easy, Nka can do it

He closed the book..

Clover: We've been here racking our brains trying to communicate with her and you know how we can do so but you quiet about it?

Me: I wasn't quiet about it, Nolitha had to be there for her to come back stronger

Clover: So how do we do it?

Me: Nka is spiritually gifted, He can ask the help of an Angel

Clover: Raphael

Me: Raphael is the angel of healing, what is he going to do? Heal Nolitha to victory.. He can ask an angel created to fight, a warrior angel one that is strong and has never lost a war

Clover: Uriel

Me: Yes.. You think I'd send my Daughter to doom and relax about it if there was no solution?

I heard her phone ringing..

Clover: I'll call Nka to come right away

I went and got Nolitha's phone..

Me: Clover how do you work these things?

He was gone, I saw a green and red option. I pressed the green..

Voice: Noli, It's Nesta

I placed it on my ear..

Me: Hello

Voice: May I please talk to Nolitha?

Me: She's occupied now, She's fighting a succubus

Nesta: I'm sorry?

Me: Long story

Nesta: I'll call tomorrow

Me: That's if she'll be back

Nesta: Who is this?

Me: I am a cousin of Nolitha..

Nesta: I'll call tomorrow

Me: Very well



BISHOP MIKE

I felt something heavy on me..

I slowly opened my eyes. It was python..

I freaked out and fell off the bed, I stepped back. I was still feeling very drowsy..

I ran to the sliding door, It was locked. The keys to the sliding door were not there. I ran to the bathroom, it was locked. I ran to the door, it was also locked..

Having to have ran out of options, I made my way to the closet. I locked myself in there and I was trembling..

PROPHET NKA

I got home as quickly as possible. Titi was at the therapist, Ella was at school. Titi's session is 1hr long..

Me: There's a way?

Clover: Apparently

Me: What is the way? How do we do it?

Jane: Nolitha is defenseless but she can get help from an angel

Me: How do we get Raphael to her?

Clover: Yeah no.. A warrior angel, Uriel

Me: I've only had contact with Raphael, I can talk to Raphael and he can talk to Uriel

Jane: Angels can't defy Human beings, so it'll be best to call upon Uriel straight

Me: How do I call him?

Jane: You just call him

Me: Just like that?

Jane: Yes

Clover and I looked at each other..

Me: This better work!

NESTA

I was escorted back to my room..

I walked in and the Guard locked..

I sat on my bed, At least we have Tvs in our rooms. 7 years is really not that bad, There's hope.

I thought that killing Jeff was going to depress me but it didn't, All I felt deep inside was nothing but anger for him..

PROPHET NKA

Jane and Clover gave us space..

I was sitting on the bed and holding Nolitha's hand as I called upon Uriel.. She was feeling very hot..

Uriel appeared, He was bigger than Raphael. He was a giant that I almost he was going to break the ceiling. He had steel Armour on him.. His sword extended from his waist touching the floor. It was gold, pure gold..

Me: Uriel

Uriel: Prophet

Me: I need your help

Uriel: I know

Me: Nolitha is in danger, She needs help

He walked up to us and placed his big hand on her forehead..

NOLITHA

We were at the edge of it, I was leaning over. Just a slight push and I'm in. I could feel the flames burning me a little..

Succubus: Goodbye

She pushed me over and I fell down, deep to the lake of fire screaming. I was burning. I felt the flames burning through my skin..

All of a sudden, in that mist of it all. I felt someone

grabbing me and flying upwards with me..

I stood behind the succubus, She turned..

Succubus: Impossible!!!!

Me: Maybe your God is selective, Maybe yours doesn't come through but mine. Mine comes through, He will never leave me no forsake me!!

She lifted her whip, I sword cut it through. A white light behind me got aimed at the succubus. It knocked her off and she fell into the lake of fire..

When her screaming seized. The hell hole closed up. I turned back and I was alone, I don't even know who helped me.. The scene changed, from darkness to light. A warm light, feeling my heart with warmth and peace..

## PROPHET NKA

Uriel moved his hand from Nolitha. Her breathing picked up, She even moved and faced the other side..

Me: It's done?

Uriel: She's just in a deep sleep now, She'll wake up anytime

Me: Will she remember?

Uriel: Yes.. That's one part of her life that she will remember, She will remember how God's grace fell upon her. How God saved her and she ain't think about turning back but she won't know an Angel helped her. She can't see me



Me: Thank you

Uriel: Life is hard, challenges will always be there. It might seem like heaven is quiet but we not. All you have to do is just ask for help that's all when you feel like you can't go on. God always makes a way, Just ask for help we'll be there

I nodded..

He disappeared..

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

The door opened, Jane walked in..

Jane: How are we doing?

Me: We doing good

Jane: I'm glad..

Me: Thank you

Jane: She's going to be okay, I feel also my work is done here.. I can rest in peace

Me: You leaving?

Jane: I have a long way to go

Me: A long way?

Jane: Purgatory so my soul can go through purification before I enter paradise when the time goes

Me: Wait you'll be there until the end of the world? That's a long time

Jane: Not too long the world is at it's ending, It's only a matter of time

Me: I understand

Jane: In Purgatory I won't be able to watch over Nolitha, I'll be restricted. I am trusting in you in one thing. No matter what happens, She shouldn't lose her faith in God. That's one higher power that she has now and only God

Me: I promise

Jane: I'm proud at how things are turning, I bless you both

Me: Do me one favor

Jane: Yes

Me: Don't go until the wedding, She'll need at least a family member there

Jane: I promise

To be continued

We'll continue with our runathon tomorrow again.

Bonus after bonus 9am we up until late

SEASON FINALE

85

JANE (NOLITHA'S MOTHER)

A WEEK LATER

He was sitting in the garden, I walked up to him..

Me: Good morning, Here's your tea

He took the cup with his hands trembling..

Mike: I can't believe Pastor Evans died, His private jet crashed

I am here to get revenge to all those who have wronged me. Pastor Evans was amongst them. I'm the reason his jet crashed, I had it destructed spiritually and only targeted him. Miraculously his wife survived they were traveling together but she's said to be in a bad condition. She's going to survive because it's not her time nor was I targeting her.. Evans got Mike into these things, He's the reason my ex husband turned dark..

Mike: I wanna sign my proxy to you

Me: Wow that's, that's big

Mike: Give you power of proxy to handle my asserts until I recover from what it is that's happening, You the only Person I trust now

Me: Wow I'm honoured, Or I'll be honoured

Mike: Thank you Kholo, We've known each other for a short while but.. You have proven to be true, You have proven to be loyal. You haven't gone around hanging my dirty laundry in public

Me: It's okay.. We'll get through it

NOLITHA

I fixed her top..

Me: Are you okay?

She nodded..

We were at the mental institution to see Nesta..

We sat in the waiting room and they brought her to

us..

Titi: Mama!!

Nesta: Titi

Titi got up from her chair and they hugged..

Nesta: Look at you, you've grown since the last time  
I've seen you

I got up and hugged her too..

Nesta: It's good to see you guys

We all sat down..



Me: You look good.. You look sane

She laughed..

Nesta: I'm glad to see you guys

Me: Me too

Nesta: How is it going with the social worker?

Me: Well Nka's status is helping, and that the social worker is attending our church. We almost there, In a couple of months the adoption will be through. Nka and I we going to be Titi's official guardians

Nesta: Nolitha I can't thank you enough

Me: It's okay. In turn you gave me a Daughter, She's

a very lovely girl

Nesta: Do you like Living with Aunty Noli?

Titi: Yes and Ella

Me: They best friends, Sisters. Tighter than blood sisters

Nesta: I'm happy

Me: Even therapy she's doing well, She's also singing at church. She's a lead singer at Sunday school

We both laughed..

Nesta: She always had a beautiful voice

PROPHET NKA

Valentia: Prophet.. I made a mistake, Letting you go.  
Not having faith in you

Me: You did what you had to do

Valentia: The masses want you back

Me: All?

Valentia: Obviously not all

Me: Will I get sacked again?

Valentia: Of course not

Me: Good

Valentia: Not only that, You have a new benefit in your new contract

Me: Okay

Valentia: Co-Producer of the show with a better pay

Me: I didn't expect this

Valentia: The God you serve is true. Despite how bad your reputation was tainted but people still believe in you, They still have faith in you. Though your contract states that you shouldn't have big scandals that will taint our image

Me: Agreed

JANE (NOLITHA'S MOTHER)

As soon as Python dies, The riches will vanish. They will start crumbling, they were attained through evil after all..

I had called the Lawyer to come over, I just have one mission in all this. Mike to confess his Sins publicly so and he will..

I prepared his meal and poured the bills..

NOLITHA

We left the institution and went to the car.

I got a call from the social worker..

Her: How is it going finding a school for Titi?

Me: I have since tried at Ella's school and they said they will get back to me. At least if she goes to the same school with Ella

Her: Okay that's good, Inform me if you need any help

Me: I don't know if she's ready for school, I fear she might have a breakdown

Her: We won't know until she goes, There's a therapist at school too

Me: Yes that's true

Her: We'll talk soon

Me: Okay bye

After my situation with the succubus, I've dedicated my life to fighting demons with Clover. We have a show that runs on YouTube called "Demonology". We are trying to get it into DSTV, Hoping we will win..

NESTA

I sat down..

Kooper: Nesta, I have bad news

Me: Okay

Kooper: The judge finds you a threat to the society, you killed without any mercy. You are a certified psychopath so he's deliberated that you will be here for longer. Longer than 7 years, Probably even longer than 20 years..

Me: I understand

.

To be continued



## SEASON FINALE

86

NOLITHA

Clover: And you say that your house is haunted?

Her: Yes

Clover: Can you tell us what happens in the house?  
That makes you think it's haunted

Her: At night we hear disturbing sounds, Like  
groaning

Clover: Where?

Her: From the storage room, It's a room where we don't enter

Clover: Shall we check it out?

Me: Let's check it out

Her: You all Becareful now

BISHOP MIKE

I checked the rope, and it looked strong..

Melissa: Killing yourself won't help you, I'll still torment on you on the other side

Me: What is it that you want from me?

Melissa: I want you to confess what you did,  
Confessing will free from the bondage. It will free  
you from my sorrows tormenting you

Me: Melissa please don't do this

Melissa: Confess!!!!

Me: Fine.. I'll confess.. I'll confess

JANE (NOLITHA'S MOTHER)

I didn't have much time left.. I was running out of  
time and there's no way that I am going to make it to  
the wedding.. I just didn't wanna stress them out..

I took out my ring, not my marital ring but one that my Mother gave it to me. I put it under Nka's pillow. That's the ring I want Nka to propose to Nolitha with..

Titi walked in..

Titi: Aunty can we eat lunch?

Explaining to this child what I am is going to confuse her more, So it was best telling her that I am Nolitha's distant cousin..

Me: Yes of course

We walked out and went to the kitchen..

Me: I'll make you an avocado and bacon sandwich

Titi: Okay thank you

I went down to her level and held her hands..

Me: You might not understand this but you are going to grow up and be an asset to the world. It's not about where you come from, but where you going. The world is ready for your testimony, The world is ready for you. God is the God of restoration. What was lost, he will restore it. It doesn't rain everyday, There will be sunshine some day

Nka: Wow.. What a beautiful speech

I rose up..

Me: It's rude to sneak up on people

Nka: You sounding like a woman who is saying her Goodbyes

Me: Nonsense and miss the wedding!

Nka: It's good to hear you'll be staying

Me: I have to go.. I have Mike to attend too

Nka: Guess we will see you tomorrow

Me: Tomorrow it is

I looked at Titi..

Me: Goodbye Darling

Titi: Bye

Me: I'll get my bag

MIKE

I did a live on my Instagram account.. 27k people were watching already..

Me: I never thought it would come to this, I never thought one day I'd be sitting here confessing my sins..

People were commenting..

"You don't look okay Bishop"

.

"You look like you haven't slept in a while"

.

"What's going on?"

Me: I.. Sometimes in life we seek the easy way out, and the easy way out has consequences. Terrible consequences

"What are you talking about?"

.

"Don't tell us you one of the Pastors with a snake"

Me: Yes unfortunately I am

I moved the camera and showed the python.

I focused the camera on me as I walked out of the basement...



"Ohh my goodness.. This is unreal, Are you serious?"

.

"Noo bafwethu this is a movie"

Me: Not only that but I..

I fought back tears ..

Me: I.. My wife Melissa I sacrificed her, I killed her.  
Same goes to my ex wife, My first wife Jane. I also  
had her killed as a sacrifice for me to have what I  
have now

Tears streamed down..

Me: I'm not proud of what I did, I wish I can go back  
in time and fix it all

"bullshit!!"

.

"Woow!! These things really happen kanti"

.

"Wait guys.. Hayini he has a python!"

PROPHET NKA

Me: I'm going to the bedroom to lie down. When you done you can watch TV okay?

Titi: Okay

I restrain from touching her. The affection I show to my Niece, I can't have that with Titi as yet. A kiss on the forehead, A hug. It might trigger her, We still have a long way..

I got to the bedroom and fixed my pillow, when I lifted it up. I saw a ring. I took it and looked at it, I realized from then that Jane is not coming back. This is her way of saying Goodbye, Nolitha is going to be devastated.

NOLITHA

We walked out of the store room..

Lady: So did you find anything?

Me: Yes..

Lady: What is it?

Clover: This newspaper, dates back to 2009. Your husband and Son died in a terrible accident

Lady: I know that

Me: You died in the storeroom

Lady: What?

Clover: You seeing and experiencing things because you are not in this physical world, you are on the other side

Me: Just trapped in this house because your body was never found

Clover: It's under a pile of boxes and other things somewhere, where you wouldn't be easily found

Me: You used to drink a lot. From how we discovered

your body, you had a whiskey bottle in your hand

Clover: The nature of your death is unclear but you seemed to have tripped and fell, you hit your head and possibly sustained serious internal bleeding

Me: You could've died recently, your body is just starting to decompose

Clover: Hence your house can't be sold, you chase everyone out

Lady: How is.. How are you seeing me?

Clover: You are a troubled spirit

Me: And we wear necklaces that help us see ghosts, especially troubled ones

Clover: So we know how to separate ghosts from demons

The house agent walked in..

Agent: Did you find anything? Is the house really haunted?

I looked at the lady..

Me: It's going to be fine now

PROPHET NKA

I looked at the ring for a while, my phone vibrated. I checked, It was a few inboxes from people who follow me. Both from Twitter and Instagram. I

checked Twitter and Mike was trending number 5. I checked and I wasn't shocked, I've done knew he was into such..

I chuckled and shook my head, When the devil plays a song. You never dance to his tune.. Ever!! Because when the songs finishes you'll be left tired.. A tired dancer at that moment is not worth it, he'll bring another dancer. He doesn't work with useless vessels, he leaves you for the next..

.

To be continued

## SEASON FINALE

87

JANE (NOLITHA'S MOTHER)

"Bang bang, he shot me down

Bang bang, I hit the ground

Bang bang, that awful sound

Bang bang, my baby shot me down"

I stood over him with a cigarette in my hand and a glass of wine..

He finally opened his eyes, He looked at me.

I had tied him up..



Mike: Kholo what are you doing?

He looked around..

Mike: What's going on? Why did you tie me up?  
What's going on?

Me: Darling..

Mike: I don't understand

I crouched next to him and blew up smoke in his  
face..

Me: Look at me Cleary because this is the last face  
you going to see

Mike: I should've known.. I should've known!

Me: I am not Kholo.. Darling!!

He looked at me...

Mike: Darling??

His eyes widened..

Mike: No.. It can't be.. It's impossible

Me: When you've been in a cage for far too long, You learn some tricks

Mike: Jane??

Me: In the Flash

Mike: That means.. That means.. Kholo, She's a python

Me: And we all going to burn down in this room to ashes

Mike: You can't do this, Jane please

I walked over to the cage, I've wheeled it upstairs from the basement. I put my glass down, with the cigarette still in my mouth..

I opened the cage, and took out python..

I carried her over to him, and placed her next to him..

Me: I was the end of you

I walked over and took the can of gasoline. I poured the petrol on him and python..

Mike: Jane please, we can talk this out

Me: There's nothing to talk out!

Mike: Jane please

I dropped the cigarette on him and it caught the fire..

I walked over and took my glass.. I went to the bathroom and looked at myself in the mirror as he screamed. You've never heard a man scream until you see him on fire. Literally!!

My eyebrow pencil and Mascara were running down my face mixed with tears..

I downed the wine and went back to the bedroom. I took the gasoline and poured it on myself. I looked at them, python was trying to crawl around lifting her head up. Mike was rolling on the floor..

I poured the petrol around me in a circle, I took out the match box from my pocket. I took out a match stick and lit myself up..

NOLITHA

I was tired when I got home, Shocked from the trend I saw earlier. Mike had confessed, Confessed to everything. The compound, Python.. I was really shocked..

The girls were at home, Helping Nka prepare dinner..

Me: Good day family

Nka: Good day to you too

Ella: We cooking you a meal

Me: You guys are busy I can see

Titi: We celebrating what?

Nka: You, and all the sacrifices you've made to be where you are today

Ella: You are amazing, With a big heart

Titi: And give good hugs

Me: You guys.. That's sweet

Nka: And.. The girls have prepared a little sketch for you

Me: A sketch

Ella: We practiced very hard

Me: Well then let's see

Nka: Let me switch off the stove

He did..

We went to the lounge..

Nka and I sat on the couch..

Ella: This play is titled "Nolitha"

Titi: The succubus

I chuckled..

Me: Really??

Ella: Once upon a time there was this girl, She lost her Mother when she was very young and was forced to marry her evil step father

Titi: Very evil



Ella: She suffered through the marriage, and no matter how much he broke her but there's one thing he couldn't break. Her spirit

Me: Wow

Titi: Then one day she had enough, She got the courage to leave despite her fear

Ella: To later on meet her prince charming

Titi: But the evil step father was still there terrorizing her

Ella: He sent her to a country called Succubus

Titi: That almost broke her but because she believed

in God, God helped her

Ella: She came back from the country victorious

Titi: A true fairytale

Ella: The End

Nka and I clapped..

Me: Woow you guys are making me cry

Ella: And a Princess in a fairy tale deserves a crown

Ella went and took a wrapped box..

She handed it to me..

Me: A crown?

Ella: Yes

I unwrapped the box, It led to a medium box until a small box..

Me: Such a small box for a crown don't you think?

Titi: We know

I opened the box, and it was a ring.. I didn't see it coming because the box was slightly bigger than a wedding ring box..

I looked at Nka..

Nka: The aftermath of it all, Is that she lived happily ever after with her prince

Me: Ohh my God

He took the ring and slipped it in my finger..

We then hugged and kissed.. Ella and Titi started clapping..

I looked at the ring, It looked familiar. It was my Grandmother's ring, My mother had it. Passed on from generation to generation..

Me: She's gone isn't she?

Nka: I'm sorry.. I think she knew goodbye was going to hurt

I nodded repeatedly..

Me: I never thought this moment would come

Nka: You deserve to be happy, You deserve beautiful things too

NESTA

"About 200 girls were found in the compound. The Sisters working here as accomplices to Bishop Mike sexually violating the girls will also face charges. The families of the girls came as soon as they saw the situation trending on social media. We have a few people protesting for Bishop Mike to get a life sentence without the possibility of Parole. We will speak to the parents of one girl who was living in this complex "

Me: Wow

Gina: I thought he was a true Man of God

Me: Not everything is at it seems

Gina: I almost went to his church.. He must rot in hell indeed!!

Guard: Okay then everyone back to their rooms

He switched off the TV..

Guard: Let's go!

NOLITHA

I looked at myself in the bathroom mirror..

Me: God what did I do to deserve your Grace? Such blessings? You came through for me when I saw no way out. Just like Joseph the dreamer, You kept to your Promises

I wiped my tears and heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

The door opened..

Nka walked in..

Nka: You okay?

Me: Yes

Nka: I am going to the pharmacy to get Ella's allergy medicine, I forgot

Me: Okay.. I was about to bath then join everyone at the table

He walked in..

Nka: I'll be back before you guys even start eating

I chuckled..

Me: Thank you, For seeing a wife in me despite everything

Nka: You are welcome



Me: I love you so much

Nka: I love you too

He kissed me..

Nka: I'll be back

He walked out..

Me: Tell the girls I'll be there

Nka: Okay they setting up the table

MELISSA'S MOTHER

The taxi dropped us off at the gate. My Daughter the one after Melissa, Told me about Mike trending so we decided to go to his house. I needed to ask Questions..

These Uber things are quiet expensive..

When we got there, It was a scene on it's own. The police, Forensic pathologist car, an Ambulance..

We walked to the gate..

Me: What's going on?

Officer: Who are you?

Me: I am.. This is my Son in law's house.. What happened?

Officer: Neighbours saw a smoke and fire coming out of the balcony, They called the police..

Me: What??

I saw two body bags being wheeled out to the pathologist car..

Me: You have to be kidding me!!

PROPHET NKA

I was driving to the pharmacy and slowed down at the stop sign, That's when a Motor Bike pulled up in front of my car..

Me: Wtf?

The Person got off the bike, and stood there leaning against it. He had a helmet on..

I hooted..

Me: Move out of the way!!

He just stood there..

Me: This is not on

A car hooted behind me..

I got out of my car and closed the door, I approached him..

Me: Excuse me? Care to move out of the way?

That's when he pulled out his gun and aimed it at me..

I couldn't believe this.. I took a few steps and he walked towards me. I turned around and rushed to my car.. That's when I heard the gun going off...

People started screaming...

NESTA

I was laying on the bed facing the ceiling. I still can't believe that Mike got what he deserved, I never thought this day would come.. I started laughing uncontrollably, I just laughed and kept on laughing..

NOLITHA

I had a bad feeling deep down. An anxiety attack, I felt this weird amount of fear deep inside of me..

I took a few deep breaths..

Ella: Are you okay Aunty?

Me: I'm okay.. Just wondering what's taking Nka long, It's been an hour

I heard the door bell ring..

Me: Girls I'm coming

I walked over to the door to open, It was Clover..

Me: Clover?

He was wearing a black leather jacket, One that a biker would wear..

He walked in..

Me: Nka is not here

Clover: I know

I looked at him..

Clover: Nolitha, Uhm.. Something happened

Me: What happened?

Clover: Nka got shot

Me: What? What do you mean Nka got shot

Clover: I'm sorry

Me: No.. No.. No.. Don't say that, Nka is alright. He just left to go g.. Nka is okay.. He's okay.. It's not him, It's not him!!

Clover: No-

Me: He's fine!! He's fine!! It's not him

.

\*\*\*\*\*THE END\*\*\*\*\*